



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

A. BRENTANO,  
708 Broadway.

McMILLAN  
SHAKESPEARE LIBRARY.

PRESENTED TO THE  
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN.

BY  
JAMES McMILLAN,  
OF DETROIT.

822,8

553

1857

V



THE  
PLAYS AND POEMS  
OF  
SHAKESPEARE.

VOL. XV.







T. Starling sculpsit

SHAKESPEARE.

THE  
PLAYS AND POEMS  
OF

SHAKESPEARE,

ACCORDING TO THE  
IMPROVED TEXT OF EDMUND MALONE,

INCLUDING THE LATEST REVISIONS,

WITH  
A LIFE, GLOSSARIAL NOTES, AN INDEX,  
AND  
ONE HUNDRED AND SEVENTY ILLUSTRATIONS,  
FROM DESIGNS BY ENGLISH ARTISTS.

EDITED BY  
A. J. VALPY, A.M.  
FELLOW OF PEMBROKE COLLEGE, OXFORD.

IN FIFTEEN VOLUMES.

VOL. XV.

LONDON :  
HENRY G. BOHN, YORK STREET, COVENT GARDEN.  
1857.



Shakspeare has the decisive merit of having furnished more passages which dwell on the memory, and are applicable to common occasions, than any other writer of his country, probably than any extant writer in the whole range of literature. These choice products of his genius are culled by the English reader with scarcely any interruption from the gross matter, in which, like pure gold in its matrix, they are often imbedded : and I do not think it is exaggerating the effect of poetry, to suppose that the characteristic English manliness of thought has been greatly indebted to him for its preservation, amid prevailing luxury and fashionable frivolity.

DR. ATKIN.



CONTENTS  
OF THE  
FIFTEENTH VOLUME.

---

P O E M S.

	PAGE
VENUS AND ADONIS . . . . .	1
THE RAPE OF LUCRECE . . . . .	59
SONNETS . . . . .	145
A LOVER'S COMPLAINT . . . . .	243
THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM . . . . .	261
INDEX TO THE STRIKING PASSAGES AND BEAUTIES . . . . .	283

ILLUSTRATIONS  
TO THE  
FIFTEENTH VOLUME.

---

	PAGE
1. Portrait of Shakspeare. Frontispiece.	
2. Venus and Adonis, from a Painting by <i>Romarelli</i> .	7
3. Lucretia.— <i>Domenichino</i> .	138

## VENUS AND ADONIS.

*Vilia miretur vulgus, mihi flavus Apollo  
Pocula Castalia plena ministret aqua.*

OVID.



HISTORICAL NOTICE  
OF  
VENUS AND ADONIS.

---

This poem, which our author himself has informed us was his first composition, was entered on the books of the Stationers' Company, April 18th, 1593, and is frequently alluded to by his contemporaries. 'As the soul of Euphorbus,' says Meres, in his Wit's Treasury, 1598, 'was thought to live in Pythagoras, so the sweet, witty soul of Ovid lives in mellifluous and honey-tongued Shakspeare. Witness his Venus and Adonis, his Lucrece,' &c. Shakspeare had without doubt read the account of Venus and Adonis in the tenth book of Ovid's Metamorphoses translated by Golding, 1567, though he has chosen to deviate from the classical story, which Ovid and Spenser had set before him, following probably the model presented to him by a short piece intitled 'The Sheepheard's Song of Venus and Adonis,' supposed by Malone to have been the production of Henry Constable, and published some time previous to the appearance of this poem; although no earlier copy of it can now be found than that contained in England's Helicon, 1600.



## THE EPISTLE.

---

TO THE

RIGHT HONORABLE HENRY WRIOTHEESLY,  
EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON, AND BARON OF TICHEFIELD,

RIGHT HONORABLE,

I know not how I shall offend in dedicating my unpolished lines to your lordship, nor how the world will censure me for choosing so strong a prop to support so weak a burthen: only, if your honor seem but pleased, I account myself highly praised, and vow to take advantage of all idle hours, till I have honored you with some graver labor. But if the first heir of my invention prove deformed, I shall be sorry it had so noble a godfather, and never after ear<sup>1</sup> so barren a land, for fear it yield me still so bad a harvest. I leave it to your honorable survey, and your honor to your heart's content; which I wish may always answer your own wish, and the world's hopeful expectation.

Your honor's in all duty,

WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.

---

<sup>1</sup> Plough.







## VENUS AND ADONIS.

---

### ARGUMENT.

Venus in vain endeavors to inspire her favorite Adonis with a mutual passion, and to dissuade him from a too eager pursuit of the pleasures of the chase. The youth rejects the overtures, and disregards the advice of the goddess, and is mortally wounded by a wild boar: his body is changed into a flower called anemone by his disconsolate mistress, who, after tenderly lamenting his untimely death, is conveyed in the clouds to Paphos.

---

EVEN as the sun with purple-color'd face  
Had ta'en his last leave of the weeping morn,  
Rose-cheek'd Adonis hied him to the chase;  
Hunting he loved, but love he laugh'd to scorn:  
Sick-thoughted Venus makes amain unto him,  
And like a bold-faced suitor 'gins to woo him.

' Thrice fairer than myself,' thus she began,  
' The field's chief flower, sweet above compare,  
Stain to all nymphs, more lovely than a man,  
More white and red than doves or roses are;  
Nature that made thee, with herself at strife,  
Saith that the world hath ending with thy life.

‘ Vouchsafe, thou wonder, to alight thy steed,  
 And rein his proud head to the saddle-bow :  
 If thou wilt deign this favor, for thy meed,  
 A thousand honey secrets shalt thou know.

Here come and sit, where never serpent hisses,  
 And, being set, I ’ll smother thee with kisses ;

‘ And yet not cloy thy lips with loathed satiety,  
 But rather famish them amid their plenty,  
 Making them red and pale with fresh variety,  
 Ten kisses short as one, one long as twenty :

A summer’s day will seem an hour but short,  
 Being wasted in such time-beguiling sport.’

With this, she sebeth on his sweating palm,  
 The precedent of pith and livelihood,  
 And, trembling in her passion, calls it balm,  
 Earth’s sovereign salve to do a goddess good :

Being so enraged, desire doth lend her force,  
 Courageously to pluck him from his horse.

Over one arm the lusty courser’s rein,  
 Under her other was the tender boy,  
 Who blush’d and pouted in a dull disdain,  
 With leaden appetite, unapt to toy ;

She red and hot, as coals of glowing fire ;  
 He red for shame, but frosty in desire.

The studded bridle on a ragged bough  
 Nimbly she fastens ; (O, how quick is love !)

The steed is stalled up, and even now  
 To tie the rider she begins to prove :  
 Backward she push'd him, as she would be  
 thrust ;  
 And govern'd him in strength, though not in  
 lust.

So soon was she along, as he was down,  
 Each leaning on their elbows and their hips :  
 Now doth she stroke his cheek, now doth he frown,  
 And 'gins to chide, but soon she stops his lips ;  
 And kissing speaks, with lustful language broken,  
 ' If thou wilt chide, thy lips shall never open.'

He burns with bashful shame ; she with her tears  
 Doth quench the maiden burning of his cheeks ;  
 Then with her windy sighs and golden hairs,  
 To fan and blow them dry again she seeks :  
 He saith, she is immodest, blames her 'miss ;<sup>1</sup>  
 What follows more, she murders with a kiss.

Even as an empty eagle, sharp by fast,  
 Tires <sup>2</sup> with her beak on feathers, flesh, and bone.  
 Shaking her wings, devouring all in haste,  
 Till either gorge be stuff'd, or prey be gone ;  
 Even so she kiss'd his brow, his cheek, his  
 chin ;  
 And where she ends, she doth anew begin.

<sup>1</sup> i. e. misbehavior.

<sup>2</sup> Tears, pecks.

Forced to content, but never to obey,  
Panting he lies, and breatheth in her face :  
She feedeth on the steam, as on a prey ;  
And calls it heavenly moisture, air of grace ;  
Wishing her cheeks were gardens full of flowers,  
So they were dew'd with such distilling showers.

Look, how a bird lies tangled in a net,  
So fasten'd in her arms Adonis lies ;  
Pure shame and awed resistance made him fret,  
Which bred more beauty in his angry eyes :  
Rain, added to a river that is rank,<sup>1</sup>  
Perforce will force it overflow the bank.

Still she entreats, and prettily entreats,  
For to a pretty ear she tunes her tale ;  
Still is he sullen, still he lowers and frets,  
Twixt crimson shame, and anger ashy-pale :  
Being red, she loves him best ; and being white,  
Her best is better'd with a more delight.

Look how he can, she cannot choose but love ;  
And by her fair immortal hand she swears  
From his soft bosom never to remove,  
Till he take truce with her contending tears,  
Which long have rain'd, making her cheeks all  
wet ;  
And one sweet kiss shall pay this countless debt.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. full.

Upon this promise did he raise his chin,  
 Like a dive-dapper peering through a wave,  
 Who being look'd on, ducks as quickly in ;  
 So offers he to give what she did crave ;

But when her lips were ready for his pay,  
 He winks, and turns his lips another way.

Never did passenger, in summer's heat,  
 More thirst for drink, than she for this good turn :  
 Her help she sees, but help she cannot get ;  
 She bathes in water, yet her fire must burn.

‘ O, pity,’ gan she cry, ‘ flint-hearted boy !  
 ‘ Tis but a kiss I beg : why art thou coy ?

‘ I have been woo'd, as I entreat thee now,  
 Even by the stern and direful god of war,  
 Whose sinewy neck in battle ne'er did bow ;  
 Who conquers where he comes, in every jar :

Yet hath he been my captive and my slave.  
 And begg'd for that which thou unask'd shalt  
 have.

‘ Over my altars hath he hung his lance,  
 His batter'd shield, his uncontrolled crest ;  
 And for my sake hath learn'd to sport and dance,  
 To toy, to wanton, dally, smile, and jest ;  
 Scorning his churlish drum, and ensign red ;  
 Making my arms his field, his tent my bed.

‘ Thus he that over-ruled, I oversway'd,  
 Leading him prisoner in a red-rose chain :

Strong-temper'd steel his stronger strength obey'd,  
Yet was he servile to my coy disdain.

O, be not proud, nor brag not of thy might,  
For mastering her that foil'd the god of fight !

• Touch but my lips with those fair lips of thine,  
(Though mine be not so fair, yet are they red)  
The kiss shall be thine own as well as mine :—  
What seest thou in the ground ? hold up thy  
head :

Look in mine eyeballs ; there thy beauty lies :  
Then why not lips on lips, since eyes in eyes ?

• Art thou ashamed to kiss ? then wink again,  
And I will wink ; so shall the day seem night :  
Love keeps his revels where there are but twain :  
Be bold to play ; our sport is not in sight :  
These blue-vein'd violets, whereon we lean,  
Never can blab, nor know not what we mean.

• The tender spring upon thy tempting lip  
Shows thee unripe ; yet mayst thou well be tasted :  
Make use of time ; let not advantage slip :  
Beauty within itself should not be wasted :  
Fair flowers, that are not gather'd in their prime,  
Rot and consume themselves in little time.

• Were I hard-favor'd, foul, or wrinkled-old,  
Ill-nurtured, crooked, churlish, harsh in voice,  
O'er-worn, despised, rheumatic and cold,  
Thick-sighted, barren, lean, and lacking juice,

Then mightst thou pause, for then I were not  
for thee;

But having no defects, why dost abhor me?

Thou canst not see one wrinkle in my brow;  
Mine eyes are gray,<sup>1</sup> and bright, and quick in  
turning;

My beauty as the spring doth yearly grow;  
My flesh is soft and plump, my marrow burning:

My smooth moist hand, were it with thy hand  
felt,

Would in thy palm dissolve, or seem to melt.

Bid me discourse, I will enchant thine ear;

Or, like a fairy, trip upon the green;

Or, like a nymph, with long dishevell'd hair,  
Dance on the sands, and yet no footing seen.

Love is a spirit all compact of fire;

Not gross to sink, but light, and will aspire.

Witness this primrose bank whereon I lie:

These forceless flowers like sturdy trees support me;  
Two strengthless doves will draw me through the

sky,

From morn to night, even where I list to sport me.

Is love so light, sweet boy; and may it be,

That thou shouldst think it heavy unto thee?

---

<sup>1</sup> What we now call blue eyes, were in Shakspeare's time called gray.

‘ Is thine own heart to thine own face affected ?  
 Can thy right hand seize love upon thy left ?  
 Then woo thyself, be of thyself rejected,  
 Steal thine own freedom, and complain on theft.

Narcissus so himself himself forsook,  
 And died to kiss his shadow in the brook.

‘ Torches are made to light, jewels to wear,  
 Dainties to taste, fresh beauty for the use,  
 Herbs for their smell, and sappy plants to bear :  
 Things growing to themselves are growth’s abuse.

Seeds spring from seeds, and beauty breedeth  
 beauty :

Thou wast begot ;—to get it is thy duty.

‘ Upon the earth’s increase why shouldst thou feed,  
 Unless the earth with thy increase be fed ?  
 By law of Nature thou art bound to breed,  
 That thine may live when thou thyself art dead ;  
 And so in spite of death thou dost survive,  
 In that thy likeness still is left alive.’

By this, the love-sick queen began to sweat,  
 For, where they lay, the shadow had forsook them ;  
 And Titan, tired <sup>1</sup> in the midday heat,  
 With burning eye did hotly overlook them ;  
 Wishing Adonis had his team to guide,  
 So he were like him, and by Venus’ side.

---

<sup>1</sup> For attired.

And now Adonis, with a lazy spright,  
 And with a heavy, dark, disliking eye,  
 His lowering brows o'erwhelming his fair sight,  
 Like misty vapors, when they blot the sky,  
 Souring his cheeks, cries. ' Fie, no more of love !  
 The sun doth burn my face ; I must remove.'

' Ah me ! ' quoth Venus, ' young, and so unkind ?  
 What bare excuses makest thou to be gone !  
 I 'll sigh celestial breath, whose gentle wind  
 Shall cool the heat of this descending sun :  
 I 'll make a shadow for thee of my hairs ;  
 If they burn too, I 'll quench them with my  
 tears.

' The sun that shines from heaven, shines but warm ;  
 And, lo, I lie between that sun and thee :  
 The heat I have from thence doth little harm ;  
 Thine eye darts forth the fire that burneth me :  
 And were I not immortal, life were done,  
 Between this heavenly and earthly sun.

' Art thou obdurate, flinty, hard as steel ?  
 Nay, more than flint, for stone at rain relenteth :  
 Art thou a woman's son, and canst not feel  
 What 'tis to love ? how want of love tormenteth ?  
 O, had thy mother borne so hard a mind,  
 She had not brought forth thee, but died un-  
 kind.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Without children.

‘ What am I, that thou shouldst contemn me this ?  
 Or what great danger dwells upon my suit ?  
 What were thy lips the worse for one poor kiss ?  
 Speak, fair ; but speak fair words, or else be mute :  
 Give me one kiss ; I ’ll give it thee again ;  
 And one for interest, if thou wilt have twain.

‘ Fie, lifeless picture, cold and senseless stone,  
 Well-painted idol, image, dull and dead,  
 Statue, contenting but the eye alone ;  
 Thing like a man, but of no woman bred :  
 Thou art no man, though of a man’s com-  
 plexion ;  
 For men will kiss even by their own direction.’

This said, impatience chokes her pleading tongue,  
 And swelling passion doth provoke a pause ;  
 Red cheeks and fiery eyes blaze forth her wrong :  
 Being judge in love, she cannot right her cause :  
 And now she weeps, and now she fain would  
 speak,  
 And now her sobs do her intendments <sup>1</sup> break.

Sometimes she shakes her head, and then his hand ;  
 Now gazeth she on him, now on the ground ;  
 Sometimes her arms infold him like a band ;  
 She would, he will not in her arms be bound ;  
 And when from thence he struggles to be gone,  
 She locks her lily fingers, one in one.

---

<sup>1</sup> Intentions.

• Fondling,' she saith, 'since I have hemm'd thee  
here,

Within the circuit of this ivory pale,  
I'll be a park, and thou shalt be my deer ;  
Feed where thou wilt, on mountain or in dale :  
Graze on my lips ; and, if those hills be dry,  
Stray lower, where the pleasant fountains lie.

• Within this limit is relief enough ;  
Sweet bottom-grass, and high delightful plain,  
Round rising hillocks, brakes obscure and rough,  
To shelter thee from tempest and from rain :  
Then be my deer, since I am such a park ;  
No dog shall rouse thee, though a thousand  
bark.'

At this Adonis smiles, as in disdain,  
That in each cheek appears a pretty dimple :  
Love made those hollows, if himself were slain,  
He might be buried in a tomb so simple ;  
Foreknowing well, if there he came to lie,  
Why there Love lived, and there he could not  
die.

These lovely caves, these round enchanting pits,  
Open'd their mouths to swallow Venus' liking :  
Being mad before, how doth she now for wits ?  
Struck dead at first, what needs a second striking ?

Poor queen of love, in thine own law forlorn,  
To love a cheek that smiles at thee in scorn !

Now which way shall she turn? what shall she say?

Her words are done, her woes the more increasing;  
The time is spent, her object will away,  
And from her twining arms doth urge releasing.

‘Pity!’ she cries; ‘some favor! some remorse!’<sup>1</sup>  
Away he springs, and hasteth to his horse.

But, lo, from forth a copse that neighbors by,  
A breeding jennet, lusty, young, and proud,  
Adonis’ trampling courser doth espy,  
And forth she rushes, snorts, and neighs aloud:

The strong-neck’d steed, being tied unto a tree,  
Breaketh his rein, and to her straight goes he.

Imperiously he leaps, he neighs, he bounds,  
And now his woven girths he breaks asunder;  
The bearing earth with his hard hoof he wounds,  
Whose hollow womb resounds like heaven’s thunder:

The iron bit he crusheth ‘tween his teeth,  
Controlling what he was controlled with.

His ears up prick’d; his braided hanging mane  
Upon his compass’d<sup>2</sup> crest now stand on end;  
His nostrils drink the air, and forth again,  
As from a furnace, vapors doth he send:

---

<sup>1</sup> Remorse is here used for tenderness.

<sup>2</sup> Arched.

His eye, which scornfully glisters like fire,  
Shows his hot courage and his high desire.

Sometime he trots, as if he told the steps,  
With gentle majesty and modest pride ;  
Anón he rears upright, curvets and leaps,  
As who should say, Lo ! thus my strength is tried ;  
And this I do to captivate the eye  
Of the fair breeder that is standing by.

What recketh he his rider's angry stir,  
His flattering holla, or his ' Stand, I say ? '  
What cares he now for curb, or pricking spur ?  
For rich caparisons, or trapping gay ?  
He sees his love, and nothing else he sees,  
For nothing else with his proud sight agrees.

Look, when a painter would surpass the life,  
In limning out a well-proportion'd steed,  
His art with nature's workmanship at strife,  
As if the dead the living should exceed ;  
So did this horse excel a common one,  
In shape, in courage, color, pace, and bone.

Round-hoof'd, short-jointed, fetlocks shag and long,  
Broad breast, full eye, small head, and nostril wide,  
High crest, short ears, straight legs, and passing  
strong,

Thin mane, thick tail, broad buttock, tender hide :  
Look, what a horse should have, he did not lack,  
Save a proud rider on so proud a back.

Sometime he scuds far off, and there he stares ;  
 Anon he starts at stirring of a feather ;  
 To bid the wind a base<sup>1</sup> he now prepares,  
 And whe'er he run or fly, they know not whether ;  
 For through his mane and tail the high wind  
     sings,  
 Fanning the hairs, who wave like feather'd wings.

He looks upon his love, and neighs unto her ;  
 She answers him, as if she knew his mind :  
 Being proud, as females are, to see him woo her,  
 She puts on outward strangeness, seems unkind ;  
 Spurns at his love, and scorns the heat he feels,  
     Beating his kind embracements with her heels.

Then, like a melancholy malecontent,  
 He vails<sup>2</sup> his tail, that, like a falling plume,  
 Cool shadow to his melting buttock lent :  
 He stamps, and bites the poor flies in his fume.  
 His love, perceiving how he is enraged,  
     Grew kinder, and his fury was assuaged.

His testy master goeth about to take him ;  
 When, lo, the unback'd breeder, full of fear,  
 Jealous of catching, swiftly doth forsake him,  
 With her the horse, and left Adonis there :

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. to challenge the wind to a contest for superiority.  
 Base is a rustic game, sometimes termed prison-base, or  
 prison-bars.

<sup>2</sup> Lowers.

As they were mad, unto the wood they hie  
them ;  
Outstripping crows, that strive to overfly them.

All swoln with chasing, down Adonis sits,  
Banning<sup>1</sup> his boisterous and unruly beast ;  
And now the happy season once more fits,  
That love-sick Love by pleading may be bless'd ;  
For lovers say, the heart hath treble wrong,  
When it is barr'd the aidance of the tongue.

An oven that is stopp'd, or river stay'd,  
Burneth more hotly, swelleth with more rage :  
So of concealed sorrow may be said ;  
Free vent of words love's fire doth assuage ;  
But when the heart's attorney<sup>2</sup> once is mute,  
The client breaks, as desperate in his suit.

He sees her coming, and begins to glow,  
Even as a dying coal revives with wind ;  
And with his bonnet hides his angry brow ;  
Looks on the dull earth with disturbed mind ;  
Taking no notice that she is so nigh,  
For all askaunce he holds her in his eye.

O, what a sight it was, wistly<sup>3</sup> to view  
How she came stealing to the wayward boy !

---

<sup>1</sup> Cursing.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. the tongue.

<sup>3</sup> Attentively.

To note the fighting conflict of her hue !  
How white and red each other did destroy !

But now, her cheek was pale ; and by and by  
It flash'd forth fire, as lightning from the sky.

Now was she just before him as he sat,  
And like a lowly lover down she kneels ;  
With one fair hand she heaveth up his hat,  
Her other tender hand his fair cheek feels :

His tenderer cheek receives her soft hand's print,  
As apt as new-fallen snow takes any dint.

O, what a war of looks was then between them !  
Her eyes, petitioners, to his eyes suing ;  
His eyes saw her eyes as they had not seen them ;  
Her eyes woo'd still, his eyes disdain'd the wooing :  
And all this dumb play had his<sup>1</sup> acts made plain  
With tears, which, chorus-like, her eyes did rain.

Full gently now she takes him by the hand,  
A lily prison'd in a jail of snow,  
Or ivory in an alabaster band ;  
So white a friend engirts so white a foe :

This beauteous combat, wilful and unwilling,  
Show'd like two silver doves that sit a biling.

Once more the engine of her thoughts began :—  
‘ O fairest mover on this mortal round,

---

<sup>1</sup> Its.

Would thou wert as I am, and I a man;  
 My heart all whole as thine, thy heart my wound;<sup>1</sup>  
 For one sweet look thy help I would assure thee,  
 Though nothing but my body's bane would cure  
 thee.'

' Give me my hand,' saith he: ' why dost thou  
 feel it? '

' Give me my heart,' saith she, ' and thou shalt  
 have it:

O, give it me, lest thy hard heart do steel it,  
 And being steel'd, soft sighs can never grave it:

Then love's deep groans I never shall regard,  
 Because Adonis' heart hath made mine hard.'

' For shame,' he cries: ' let go, and let me go:  
 My day's delight is past, my horse is gone;  
 And 'tis your fault I am bereft him so:

I pray you, hence, and leave me here alone:  
 For all my mind, my thought, my busy care,  
 Is how to get my palfrey from the mare.'

Thus she replies:—' Thy palfrey, as he should,  
 Welcomes the warm approach of sweet desire:  
 Affection is a coal that must be kind'd;  
 Else, suffer'd, it will set the heart on fire:  
 The sea hath bounds, but deep desire hath none;  
 Therefore no marvel though thy horse be gone.

---

<sup>1</sup> Thy heart wounded as mine is.

‘ How like a jade he stood, tied to the tree,  
 Servilely master’d with a leathern rein !  
 But when he saw his love, his youth’s fair fee,  
 He held such petty bondage in disdain ;  
 Throwing the base thong from his bending crest :  
 Enfranchising his mouth, his back, his breast.

‘ Who sees his true love in her naked bed,  
 Teaching the sheets a whiter hue than white,  
 But, when his glutton eye so full hath fed,  
 His other agents aim at like delight ?

Who is so faint, that dare not be so bold,  
 To touch the fire, the weather being cold ?

‘ Let me excuse thy courser, gentle boy ;  
 And learn of him, I heartily beseech thee,  
 To take advantage on presented joy :  
 Though I were dumb, yet his proceedings teach  
 thee.

O, learn to love ; the lesson is but plain ;  
 And, once made perfect, never lost again.’

‘ I know not love quoth he, ‘ nor will not know  
 it,  
 Unless it be a boar and then I chase it :  
 ’Tis much to borrow, and I will not owe it ;  
 My love to love is love but to disgrace it ;<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> My inclination towards love is only a desire to render it contemptible.

For I have heard it is a life in death,  
That laughs, and weeps, and all but with a  
breath.

‘ Who wears a garment shapeless and unfinish’d ?  
Who plucks the bud before one leaf put forth ?  
If springing things be any jot diminish’d,  
They wither in their prime, prove nothing worth.  
The colt that’s back’d and burthen’d being  
young,  
Loseth his pride, and never waxeth strong.

‘ You hurt my hand with wringing ; let us part,  
And leave this idle theme, this bootless chat :  
Remove your siege from my unyielding heart ;  
To love’s alarm it will not ope the gate.  
Dismiss your vows, your feigned tears, your  
flattery ;  
For where a heart is hard, they make no battery.’

‘ What ! canst thou talk ? ’ quoth she ; ‘ hast thou  
a tongue ?  
O, would thou hadst not, or I had no hearing !  
Thy mermaid’s voice hath done me double wrong ;  
I had my load before, now press’d with bearing :  
Melodious discord, heavenly tune harsh-sounding,  
Ear’s deep-sweet music, and heart’s deep-sore  
wounding.

‘ Had I no eyes, but ears, my ears would love  
That inward beauty and invisible ;

Or, were I deaf, thy outward parts would move  
 Each part in me that were but sensible :  
 Though neither eyes nor ears, to hear nor see,  
 Yet should I be in love, by touching thee.

‘ Say, that the sense of feeling were bereft me,  
 And that I could not see, nor hear, nor touch,  
 And nothing but the very smell were left me,  
 Yet would my love to thee be still as much ;  
 For from the stillatory of thy face excelling  
 Comes breath perfumed, that breedeth love by  
 smelling.

‘ But, O, what banquet wert thou to the taste,  
 Being nurse and feeder of the other four !  
 Would they not wish the feast might ever last,  
 And bid Suspicion double-lock the door ;  
 Lest Jealousy, that sour, unwelcome guest,  
 Should, by his stealing in, disturb the feast ? ’

Once more the ruby-color’d portal open’d,  
 Which to his speech did honey passage yield ;  
 Like a red morn, that ever yet betoken’d  
 Wreck to the seaman, tempest to the field,  
 Sorrow to shepherds, woe unto the birds,  
 Gusts and foul flaws<sup>1</sup> to herdmen and to  
 herds.

---

<sup>1</sup> Flaws are sudden blasts of wind

This ill presage advisedly she marketh :  
Even as the wind is hush'd before it raineth,  
Or as the wolf doth grin before he barketh,  
Or as the berry breaks before it staineth ;  
Or, like the deadly bullet of a gun,  
His meaning struck her ere his words begun :

And at his look she flatly falleth down ;  
For looks kill love, and love by looks reviveth :  
A smile recures the wounding of a frown ;  
But blessed bankrupt, that by love so thriveth !

The silly boy, believing she is dead,  
Claps her pale cheek, till clapping makes it  
red ;

And all-amazed brake off his late intent,  
For sharply he did think to reprehend her,  
Which cunning love did wittily prevent :  
Fair fall the wit that can so well defend her !

For on the grass she lies as she were slain,  
Till his breath breatheth life in her again.

He wrings her nose, he strikes her on the cheeks,  
He bends her fingers, holds her pulses hard ;  
He chafes her lips ; a thousand ways he seeks  
To mend the hurt that his unkindness marr'd :

He kisses her ; and she, by her good will,  
Will never rise, so he will kiss her still.

The night of sorrow now is turn'd to day :  
Her two blue windows faintly she upheaveth,

Like the fair sun, when in his fresh array  
He cheers the morn, and all the world relieveth :  
And as the bright sun glorifies the sky,  
So is her face illumined with her eye ;

Whose beams upon his hairless face are fix'd,  
As if from thence they borrow'd all their shine.  
Were never four such lamps together mix'd,  
Had not his clouded with his brows' repine ;  
But hers, which through the crystal tears gave  
light,  
Shone like the moon, in water seen by night.

‘ O, where am I ? ’ quoth she ; ‘ in earth or heaven,  
Or in the ocean drench'd, or in the fire ?  
What hour is this ? or morn, or weary even ?  
Do I delight to die, or life desire ?  
But now I lived, and life was death's annoy ;  
But now I died, and death was lively joy.

‘ O, thou didst kill me ;—kill me once again :  
Thy eyes’ shrewd tutor, that hard heart of thine,  
Hath taught them scornful tricks, and such disdain,  
That they have murder'd this poor heart of mine ;  
And these mine eyes, true leaders to their queen,  
But for thy piteous lips no more had seen.

‘ Long may they kiss each other, for this cure !  
O, never let their crimson liveries wear !  
And, as they last, their verdure still endure,  
To drive infection from the dangerous year !

That the star-gazers, having writ on death,  
May say, the plague is banish'd by thy breath.

‘ Pure lips, sweet seals in my soft lips imprinted,  
What bargains may I make, still to be sealing ?  
To sell myself I can be well contented,  
So thou wilt buy, and pay, and use good dealing :  
Which purchase if thou make, for fear of slips,<sup>1</sup>  
Set thy seal-manual on my wax-red lips.

‘ A thousand kisses buys my heart from me ;  
And pay them at thy leisure, one by one.  
What is ten hundred touches unto thee ?  
Are they not quickly told, and quickly gone ?  
Say, for non-payment that the debt should  
double,  
Is twenty hundred kisses such a trouble ? ’

‘ Fair queen,’ quoth he, ‘ if any love you owe me,  
Measure my strangeness <sup>2</sup> with my unripe years ;  
Before I know myself, seek not to know me ;  
No fisher but the ungrown fry forbears :  
The mellow plum doth fall, the green sticks fast,  
Or, being early pluck’d, is sour to taste.

‘ Look, the world’s comforter, with weary gait,  
His day’s hot task hath ended in the west :

---

<sup>1</sup> Slips are counterfeit money.

<sup>2</sup> Bashfulness.

The owl, night's herald, shrieks ; 'tis very late ;  
The sheep are gone to fold, birds to their nest ;  
And coal-black clouds, that shadow heaven's  
light,  
Do summon us to part, and bid good night.

' Now let me say, Good night, and so say you ;  
If you will say so, you shall have a kiss.'  
' Good night,' quoth she ; and, ere he says, Adieu,  
The honey fee of parting tender'd is :  
Her arms do lend his neck a sweet embrace ;  
Incorporate then they seem ; face grows to face :

Till, breathless, he disjoin'd, and backward drew  
The heavenly moisture, that sweet coral mouth,  
Whose precious taste her thirsty lips well knew,  
Whereon they surfeit, yet complain on drought :  
He with her plenty press'd, she faint with dearth,  
(Their lips together glued) fall to the earth.

Now quick Desire hath caught the yielding prey,  
And glutton-like she feeds, yet never filleth :  
Her lips are conquerors, his lips obey,  
Paying what ransom the insulter willeth ;  
Whose vulture thought doth pitch the price so  
high,  
That she will draw his lips' rich treasure dry :

And, having felt the sweetness of the spoil.  
With blindfold fury she begins to forage ;

Her face doth reek and smoke, her blood doth boil,  
 And careless lust stirs up a desperate courage,  
 Planting oblivion, beating reason back,  
 Forgetting shame's pure blush, and honor's  
 wreck.

Hot, faint, and weary with her hard embracing,  
 Like a wild bird being tamed with too much  
 handling ;  
 Or as the fleet-foot roe, that's tired with chasing,  
 Or like the froward infant, still'd with dandling ;  
 He now obeys, and now no more resisteth,  
 While she takes all she can, not all she listeth.

What wax so frozen but dissolves with tempering,  
 And yields at last to every light impression ?  
 Things out of hope are compass'd oft with ven-  
 turing,  
 Chiefly in love, whose leave<sup>1</sup> exceeds commission.  
 Affection faints not like a pale-faced coward ;  
 But then woos best, when most his choice is  
 froward.

When he did frown, O, had she then gave over,  
 Such nectar from his lips she had not suck'd.  
 Foul words and frowns must not repel a lover :  
 What though the rose have prickles ? yet 'tis  
 pluck'd.

---

<sup>1</sup> Licentiousness

Were beauty under twenty locks kept fast.  
Yet Love breaks through, and picks them all at  
last.

For pity now she can no more detain him ;  
The poor fool prays her that he may depart :  
She is resolved no longer to restrain him ;  
Bids him farewell, and look well to her heart,  
The which, by Cupid's bow she doth protest,  
He carries thence engaged in his breast.

' Sweet boy,' she says, ' this night I'll waste in  
sorrow,  
For my sick heart commands mine eyes to watch.  
Tell me, Love's master, shall we meet to-morrow ?  
Say, shall we ? shall we ? wilt thou make the  
match ? '

He tells her, no ; to-morrow he intends  
To hunt the boar with certain of his friends.

' The boar ! ' quoth she ; whereat a sudden pale,  
Like lawn being spread upon the blushing rose,  
Usurps her cheek ; she trembles at his tale,  
And on his neck her yoking arms she throws :  
She sinketh down, still hanging by his neck ;  
He on her belly falls, she on her back.

Now is she in the very lists of love,  
Her champion mounted for the hot encounter :  
All is imaginary she doth prove ;  
He will not manage her, although he mount her ;

That worse than Tantalus' is her annoy,  
To clip<sup>1</sup> Elysium, and to lack her joy.

Even as poor birds, deceived with painted grapes,  
Do surfeit by the eye, and pine the maw,  
Even so she languisheth in her mishaps,  
As those poor birds that helpless berries<sup>2</sup> saw :  
The warm effects which she in him finds missing,  
She seeks to kindle with continual kissing ;

But all in vain : good queen, it will not be :  
She hath assay'd as much as may be proved ;  
Her pleading hath deserved a greater fee ;  
She's Love, she loves, and yet she is not loved.  
' Fie, fie ! ' he says : ' you crush me ; let me go :  
You have no reason to withhold me so.'

' Thou hadst been gone,' quoth she, ' sweet boy, ere  
this,  
But that thou told'st me, thou wouldest hunt the  
boar.  
O, be advised ! thou know'st not what it is  
With javelin's point a churlish swine to gore,  
Whose tushes never-sheathed he whetteth still  
Like to a mortal<sup>3</sup> butcher, bent to kill.

<sup>1</sup> Embrace.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. berries that afford no help or nourishment.

<sup>3</sup> Deadly.

‘ On his bow-~~ack~~ he hath a battle set  
Of bristly pikes, that ever threat his toes ;  
His eyes like glow-worms shine when he doth  
fret ;  
His snout digs sepulchres where’er he goes :  
Being moved, he strikes whate’er is in his way ;  
And whom he strikes, his cruel tushes slay.

‘ His brawny sides, with hairy bristles arm’d,  
Are better proof than thy spear’s point can enter ;  
His short thick neck cannot be easily harm’d ;  
Being ireful, on the lion he will venture :  
The thorny brambles and embracing bushes,  
As fearful of him, part ; through whom he  
rushes.

‘ Alas, he naught esteems that face of thine,  
To which Love’s eyes pay tributary gazes ;  
Nor thy soft hands, sweet lips, and crystal eyne,  
Whose full perfection all the world amazes :  
But having thee at vantage, (wondrous dread !)  
Would root these beauties as he roots the meal.

‘ O, let him keep his loathsome cabin still !  
Beauty hath naught to do with such foul fiends :  
Come not within his danger by thy will :  
They that thrive well, take counsel of their friends.  
When thou didst name the boar, not to dis-  
semble,  
I fear’d thy fortune, and my joints did tremble.

‘ Didst thou not mark my face ? Was it not white ?  
 Saw’st thou not signs of fear lurk in mine eye ?  
 Grew I not faint ? And fell I not downright ?  
 Within my bosom, whereon thou dost lie,

My boding heart pants, beats, and takes no  
 rest ;

But, like an earthquake, shakes thee on my  
 breast :

‘ For where Love reigns, disturbing Jealousy  
 Doth call himself Affection’s sentinel ;  
 Gives false alarms, suggesteth mutiny,  
 And in a peaceful hour doth cry, ‘ Kill, kill ; ’

Distempering gentle love in his desire,  
 As air and water do abate the fire.

‘ This sour informer, this bate-breeding<sup>1</sup> spy,  
 This canker that eats up love’s tender spring,  
 This carry-tale, dissensious Jealousy,  
 That sometime true news, sometime false doth  
 bring,

Knocks at my heart, and whispers in mine ear,  
 That, if I love thee, I thy death should fear :

And more than so, presenteth to mine eye  
 The picture of an angry, chafing boar,  
 Under whose sharp fangs on his back doth lie  
 An image like thyself, all stain’d with gore ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Bate is an old word, signifying strife, contention.

Whose blood upon the fresh flowers being shed,  
Doth make them droop with grief, and hang the  
head.

What should I do, seeing thee so indeed.  
That tremble at the imagination?  
The thought of it doth make my faint heart bleed.  
And fear doth teach it divination:  
I prophesy thy death, my living sorrow,  
If thou encounter with the boar to-morrow.

‘ But if thou needs wilt hunt, be ruled by me;  
Uncouple at the timorous, flying hare;  
Or at the fox, which lives by subtilty;  
Or at the roe, which no encounter dare:  
Pursue these fearful creatures o'er the downs,  
And on thy well-breathed horse keep with thy  
hounds:

‘ And when thou hast on foot the purblind hare,  
Mark the poor wretch, to overshot<sup>1</sup> his troubles.  
How he outruns the wind, and with' what care  
He cranks<sup>2</sup> and crosses, with a thousand doubles.  
The many musits<sup>3</sup> through the which he goes,  
Are like a labyrinth to amaze his foes.

‘ Sometime he runs among a flock of sheep,  
To make the cunning hounds mistake their smell;

<sup>1</sup> Conclude.

<sup>2</sup> Winds.

<sup>3</sup> Musits are gaps in hedges.

And sometime where earth-delving conies keep,

To stop the loud pursuers in their yell;

And sometime sorteth with a herd of deer:

Danger deviseth shifts; wit waits on fear:

‘ For there his smell with others being mingled,  
The hot scent-snuffing hounds are driven to doubt,  
Ceasing their clamorous cry till they have singled,  
With much ado, the cold fault cleanly out:

Then do they spend their mouths; Echo replies,  
As if another chase were in the skies.

‘ By this, poor Wat, far off upon a hill,  
Stands on his hinder legs with listening ear,  
To hearken if his foes pursue him still;  
Anon their loud alarums he doth hear;

And now his grief may be compared well  
To one sore-sick, that hears the passing-bell.

‘ Then shalt thou see the dew-bedabbled wretch  
Turn, and return, indenting with the way;  
Each envious brier his weary legs doth scratch;  
Each shadow makes him stop, each murmur  
stay:

For misery is trodden on by many;  
And, being low, never relieved by any.

‘ Lie quietly, and hear a little more;  
Nay, do not struggle, for thou shalt not rise:  
To make thee hate the hunting of the boar,  
Unlike myself thou hear’st me moralise,

Applying this to that, and so to so :  
For love can comment upon every woe.

- Where did I leave ? — ' No matter where,' quoth he :
- Leave me, and then the story aptly ends :  
The night is spent.' — ' Why, what of that ? ' quoth, she :—
- I am,' quoth he, ' expected of my friends ;  
And now 'tis dark, and going I shall fall.' —  
‘ In night,' quoth she, ' desire sees best of all.
- But if thou fall, O, then imagine this :—  
The earth, in love with thee, thy footing trips,  
And all is but to rob thee of a kiss.  
Rich preys make true <sup>1</sup> men thieves ; so do thy lips  
    Make modest Dian cloudy and forlorn,  
    Lest she should steal a kiss, and die forsown.
- Now, of this dark night I perceive the reason :  
Cynthia for shame obscures her silver shine,  
Till forging Nature be condemn'd of treason,  
For stealing moulds from heaven that were divine,  
    Wherein she framed thee, in high heaven's de-  
        spite,  
    To shame the sun by day, and her by night :
- And therefore hath she bribed the Destinies,  
To cross the curious workmanship of nature.

---

<sup>1</sup> Honest.

To mingle beauty with infirmities,  
And pure perfection with impure defeature ;  
Making it subject to the tyranny  
Of mad mischances and much misery ;

As burning fevers, agues pale and faint,  
Life-poisoning pestilence, and frenzies wood,<sup>1</sup>  
The marrow-eating sickness, whose attaint  
Disorder breeds by heating of the blood :  
Surfeits, imposthumes, grief, and damn'd despair,  
Swear Nature's death for framing thee so fair.

And not the least of all these maladies,  
But in one minute's fight brings beauty under :  
Both favor, savor, hue, and qualities,  
Whereat the impartial gazer late did wonder,  
Are on the sudden wasted, thaw'd, and done,  
As mountain snow melts with the midday sun.

Therefore, despite of fruitless chastity,  
Love-lacking vestals, and self-loving nuns,  
That on the earth would breed a scarcity,  
And barren dearth of daughters and of sons,  
Be prodigal : the lamp that burns by night  
Dries up his oil, to lend the world his light.

What is thy body but a swallowing grave.  
Seeming to bury that posterity,

Which by the rights of time thou needs must have,  
If thou destroy them not in dark obscurity ?

If so, the world will hold thee in disdain,  
Sith <sup>1</sup> in thy pride so fair a hope is slain.

‘ So in thyself thyself art made away :  
A mischief worse than civil home-bred strife ;  
Or theirs, whose desperate hands themselves do  
slay ;

Or butcher-sire, that reaves his son of life.

Foul cankering rust the hidden treasure frets ;  
But gold that’s put to use, more gold begets.’

‘ Nay, then,’ quoth Adon, ‘ you will fall again  
Into your idle over-handled theme :  
The kiss I gave you is bestow’d in vain,  
And all in vain you strive against the stream :  
For, by this black-faced night, desire’s foul  
nurse,  
Your treatise makes me like you worse and  
worse.

‘ If love have lent you twenty thousand tongues,  
And every tongue more moving than your own,  
Bewitching like the wanton mermaid’s songs ;  
Yet from mine ear the tempting tune is blown :  
For know, my heart stands armed in mine ear,  
And will not let a false sound enter there ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Since.

‘ Lest the deceiving harmony should run  
 Into the quiet closure of my breast ;  
 And then my little heart were quite undone,  
 In his bedchamber to be barr’d of rest.

  No, lady, no ; my heart longs not to groan ;  
 But soundly sleeps, while now it sleeps alone.

‘ What have you urged that I cannot reprove ?  
 The path is smooth that leadeth on to danger :  
 I hate not love ; but your device in love,  
 That lends embracements unto every stranger.

  You do it for increase ; O, strange excuse !  
 When reason is the bawd to lust’s abuse.

‘ Call it not love, for Love to heaven is fled,  
 Since sweating Lust on earth usurp’d his name ;  
 Under whose simple semblance he hath fed  
 Upon fresh beauty, blotting it with blame ;

  Which the hot tyrant stains, and soon bereaves,  
 As caterpillars do the tender leaves.

‘ Love comforteth, like sunshine after rain,  
 But lust’s effect is tempest after sun ;  
 Love’s gentle spring doth always fresh remain,  
 Lust’s winter comes ere summer half be done.

  Love surfeits not ; lust like a glutton dies :  
 Love is all truth ; lust full of forged lies.

‘ More I could tell, but more I dare not say :  
 The text is old, the orator too green.

Therefore, in sadness, now I will away ;  
 My face is full of shame, my heart of teen :<sup>1</sup>  
 Mine ears, that to your wanton talk attended.  
 Do burn themselves for having so offended.'

With this, he breaketh from the sweet embrace  
 Of those fair arms which bound him to her breast,  
 And homeward through the dark lawnd<sup>2</sup> runs  
 apace ;

Leaves Love upon her back deeply distress'd.  
 Look, how a bright star shooteth from the sky,  
 So glides he in the night from Venus' eye ;

Which after him she darts, as one on shore  
 Gazing upon a late-embarked friend,  
 Till the wild waves will have him seen no more,  
 Whose ridges with the meeting clouds contend ;  
 So did the merciless and pitchy night  
 Fold in the object that did feed her sight :

Whereat amazed, as one that unaware  
 Hath droop'd a precious jewel in the flood,  
 Or 'stonish'd as night-wanderers often are,  
 Their light blown out in some mistrustful wood ;  
 Even so confounded in the dark she lay,  
 Having lost the fair discovery of her way.

<sup>1</sup> Sorrow.

<sup>2</sup> Lawnd and lawn were synonymous at the time of our author.

And now she beats her heart, whereat it groans.  
That all the neighbor caves, as seeming troubled,  
Make verbal repetition of her moans;  
Passion on passion deeply is redoubled:

‘Ah me!’ she cries; and twenty times, ‘Woe,  
woe!’

And twenty echoes twenty times cry so.

She, marking them, begins a wailing note,  
And sings extemporally a woful ditty;  
How love makes young men thrall, and old men  
dote;

How love is wise in folly, foolish-witty.

Her heavy anthem still concludes in woe,  
And still the choir of echoes answer so.

Her song was tedious, and outwore the night,  
For lovers’ hours are long, though seeming short:  
If pleased themselves, others, they think, delight  
In such like circumstance, with such like sport:

Their copious stories, oftentimes begun,  
End without audience, and are never done.

For who hath she to spend the night withal,  
But idle sounds resembling parasites,  
Like shrill-tongued tapsters answering every call,  
Soothing the humor of fantastic wits?

She says, ‘‘Tis so;’ they answer all, ‘‘Tis  
so:’

And would say after her, if she said No.

Lo ! here the gentle lark, weary of rest,  
From his moist cabinet mounts up on high,  
And wakes the morning, from whose silver breast  
The sun ariseth in his majesty :

Who doth the world so gloriously behold,  
That cedar-tops and hills seem burnish'd gold.

Venus salutes him with this fair good-morrow :—  
‘ O thou clear god, and patron of all light,  
From whom each lamp and shining star doth  
borrow  
The beauteous influence that makes him bright :  
There lives a son, that suck'd an earthly mother,  
May lend thee light, as thou dost lend to other.’

This said, she hasteth to a myrtle grove,  
Musing the morning is so much o'erworn,  
And yet she hears no tidings of her love :  
She hearkens for his hounds and for his horn :  
Anon she hears them chant it lustily,  
And all in haste she coasteth<sup>1</sup> to the cry :

And as she runs, the bushes in the way,  
Some catch her by the neck, some kiss her face,  
Some twine about her thigh to make her stay :  
She wildly breaketh from their strict embrace,  
Like a milch doe, whose swelling dugs do ache,  
Hasting to feed her fawn, hid in some brake.

---

<sup>1</sup> Advanceeth.

By this, she hears the hounds are at a bay.  
 Whereat she starts, like one that spies an adder  
 Wreathed up in fatal folds, just in his way,  
 The fear whereof doth make him shake and shudder  
 Even so the timorous yelping of the hounds  
 Appals her senses, and her spright confounds :

For now she knows it is no gentle chase,  
 But the blunt boar, rough bear, or lion proud ;  
 Because the cry remaineth in one place,  
 Where fearfully the dogs exclaim aloud :  
 Finding their enemy to be so curst,<sup>1</sup>  
 They all strain courtesy who shall cope him first.

This dismal cry rings sadly in her ear,  
 Through which it enters to surprise her heart,  
 Who, overcome by doubt and bloodless fear,  
 With cold-pale weakness numbs each feeling part :  
 Like soldiers, when their captain once doth yield,  
 They basely fly, and dare not stay the field.

Thus stands she in a trembling ecstasy ;  
 Till, cheering up her senses sore dismay'd,  
 She tells them, 'tis a causeless fantasy,  
 And childish error, that they are afraid :  
 Bids them leave quaking, bids them fear no  
 more :—  
 And with that word she spied the hunted boar ;

---

<sup>1</sup> *Mischievous, malicious.*

Whose frothy mouth, bepainted all with red,  
 Like milk and blood being mingled both together,  
 A second fear through all her sinews spread,  
 Which madly hurries her she knows not whither :  
 This way she runs, and now she will no further ;  
 But back retires, to rate the boar for murther.

A thousand spleens bear her a thousand ways ;  
 She treads the path that she untreads again :  
 Her more than haste is mated<sup>1</sup> with delays,  
 Like the proceedings of a drunken brain ;  
 Full of respect,<sup>2</sup> yet naught at all respecting ;  
 In hand with all things, naught at all effecting.

Here kennel'd in a brake she finds a hound,  
 And asks the weary caitiff for his master ;  
 And there another licking of his wound,  
 'Gainst venom'd sores the only sovereign plaster ;  
 And here she meets another sadly scowling,  
 To whom she speaks ; and he replies with howl-  
 ing.

When he hath ceased his ill-resounding noise,  
 Another flap-mouth'd mourner, black and grim,  
 Against the welkin vollies out his voice ;  
 Another and another answer him,  
 Ciapping their proud tails to the ground below ;  
 Shaking their scratch'd ears, bleeding as they go.

<sup>1</sup> Confounded.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. circumspection.

Look, how the world's poor people are amazed  
 At apparitions, signs, and prodigies,  
 Whereon with fearful eyes they long have gazed,  
 Infusing them with dreadful prophecies;

So she at these sad signs draws up her breath,  
 And, sighing it again, exclaims on Death:—

- ‘ Hard-favor'd tyrant, ugly, meagre, lean,  
 Hateful divorce of love,’ (thus chides she Death)
- ‘ Grim-grinning ghost, earth's worm, what dost  
 thou mean,  
 To stifle beauty, and to steal his breath;  
 Who, when he lived, his breath and beauty set  
 Gloss on the rose, smell to the violet?
- ‘ If he be dead;—O, no; it cannot be,  
 Seeing his beauty, thou shouldst strike at it:—  
 O, yes; it may: thou hast no eyes to see;  
 But hatefully at random dost thou hit.  
 Thy mark is feeble age; but thy false dart  
 Mistakes that aim, and cleaves an infant's  
 heart.
- ‘ Hadst thou but bid beware, then he had spoke;  
 And, hearing him, thy power had lost his power.  
 The Destinies will curse thee for this stroke:  
 They bid thee crop a weed, thou pluck'st a flower:  
 Love's golden arrow at him should have fled;  
 And not death's ebon dart, to strike him  
 dead.

• Dost thou drink tears, that thou provokest such weeping?  
 What may a heavy groan advantage thee?  
 Why hast thou cast into eternal sleeping  
 Those eyes that taught all other eyes to see?  
 Now Nature cares not for thy mortal<sup>1</sup> vigor,  
 Since her best work is ruin'd with thy rigor.'

Here overcome, as one full of despair,  
 She vail'd<sup>2</sup> her eyelids, who, like sluices, stopp'd  
 The crystal tide, that from her two cheeks fair  
 In the sweet channel of her bosom dropp'd;  
 But through the floodgates breaks the silver rain,  
 And with his strong course opens them again.

O, how her eyes and tears did lend and borrow!  
 Her eyes seen in the tears, tears in her eye;  
 Both crystals, where they view'd each other's  
 sorrow;—  
 Sorrow, that friendly sighs sought still to dry;  
 But like a stormy day, now wind, now rain,  
 Sighs dry her cheeks, tears make them wet again.

Variable passions throng her constant woe,  
 As striving who should best become her grief:  
 All entertain'd each passion labors so,  
 That every present sorrow seemeth chief,

---

<sup>1</sup> Deadly.

<sup>2</sup> Lowered.

But none is best : then join they all together,  
Like many clouds consulting for foul weather.

By this, far off she hears some huntsman holla ;  
A nurse's song ne'er pleased her babe so well :  
The dire imagination she did follow  
This sound of hope doth labor to expel ;  
For now reviving joy bids her rejoice,  
And flatters her it is Adonis' voice :

Whereat her tears began to turn their tide,  
Being prison'd in her eye, like pearls in glass ;  
Yet sometimes falls an orient drop beside,  
Which her cheek melts, as scorning it should  
pass,  
To wash the foul face of the sluttish ground,  
Who is but drunken when she seemeth drown'd.

O hard-believing love, how strange it seems  
Not to believe, and yet too credulous !  
Thy weal and woe are both of them extremes ;  
Despair and hope make thee ridiculous :  
The one doth flatter thee in thoughts unlikely ;  
In likely thoughts the other kills thee quickly.

Now she unweaves the web that she hath  
wrought ;  
Adonis lives, and Death is not to blame ;  
It was not she that call'd him all to naught ;  
Now she adds honors to his hateful name ;

She clepes<sup>1</sup> him king of graves, and grave for  
kings;  
Imperious supreme of all mortal things.

' No, no,' quoth she, ' sweet Death, I did but jest;  
Yet, pardon me, I felt a kind of fear,  
When as I met the boar, that bloody beast,  
Which knows no pity, but is still severe :  
Then, gentle shadow, (truth I must confess)  
I rail'd on thee, fearing my love's decease.

' 'Tis not my fault ; the boar provoked my tongue :  
Be break'd on him, invisible commander :  
'Tis he<sup>2</sup> foul creature, that hath done thee wrong ;  
I did but act, he's author of thy slander.  
Grief hath two tongues ; and never woman yet  
Could rule them both, without ten women's wit.'

Thus, hoping that Adonis is alive,  
Her rash suspect she doth extenuate ;  
And that his beauty may the better thrive,  
With Death she humbly doth insinuate ;  
Tells him of trophies, statues, tombs ; and stories  
His victories, his triumphs, and his glories.

' O Jove,' quoth she, ' how much a fool was I,  
To be of such a weak and silly mind,

---

<sup>1</sup> Calls.

<sup>2</sup> Soothe, flatter.

To wail his death, who lives, and must not die.

Till mutual overthrow of mortal kind !

For he being dead, with him is beauty slain ;  
And, beauty dead, black chaos comes again.

' Fie, fie, fond Love ! thou art so full of fear,  
As one with treasure laden, hemm'd with thieves ;  
Trifles, unwitnessed with eye or ear,  
Thy coward heart with false bethinking grieves.'

Even at this word she hears a merry horn,  
Whereat she leaps, that was but late forlorn.

As falcon to the lure, away she flies ;  
The grass stoops not, she treads on it so light ;  
And in her haste unfortunately spies  
The foul boar's conquest on her fair delight ;  
Which seen, her eyes, as murder'd with the  
view,  
Like stars ashamed of day, themselves withdrew :

Or, as the snail, whose tender horns being hit,  
Shrinks backward in his shelly cave with pain ;  
And there, all smother'd up, in shade doth sit,  
Long after fearing to creep forth again ;

So, at his bloody view, her eyes are fled  
Into the deep dark cabins of her head ;

Where they resign their office and their light  
To the disposing of her troubled brain ;  
Who bids them still consort with ugly night,  
And never wound the heart with looks again ;

Who, like a king perplexed in his throne,  
By their suggestion gives a deadly groan :

Wherewith each tributary subject quakes ;  
As when the wind, imprison'd in the ground,  
Struggling for passage, earth's foundation shakes,  
Which with cold terror doth men's minds confound :

This mutiny each part doth so surprise,  
That from their dark beds once more leap her eyes ;

And, being open'd, threw unwilling light  
Upon the wide wound that the boar had trench'd<sup>1</sup>  
In his soft flank ; whose wonted lily white  
With purple tears, that his wound wept, was drench'd :

No flower was nigh, no grass, herb, leaf, or weed,  
But stole his blood, and seem'd with him to bleed.

This solemn sympathy poor Venus noteth ;  
Over one shoulder doth she hang her head ;  
Dumbly she passions, frantically she doteth ;  
She thinks he could not die, he is not dead.  
Her voice is stopp'd, her joints forget to bow :  
Her eyes are mad that they have wept till now.

---

Upon his hurt she looks so steadfastly,  
That her sight dazzling makes the wound seem  
three;  
And then she reprimands her mangling eye,  
That makes more gashes where no breach should  
be:  
His face seems twain. each several limb is  
doublea;  
For oft the eye mistakes, the brain being  
troubled.

‘ My tongue cannot express my grief for one;  
And yet,’ quoth she, ‘ behold two Adons dead!  
My sighs are blown away, my salt tears gone,  
Mine eyes are turn’d to fire, my heart to lead.

Heavy heart’s lead, melt at mine eyes’ red  
fire!  
So shall I die by drops of hot desire.

‘ Alas, poor world, what treasure hast thou lost!  
What face remains alive that’s worth the viewing?  
Whose tongue is music now? what canst thou  
boast  
Of things long since, or any thing ensuing?  
The flowers are sweet, their colors fresh and  
trim;  
But true-sweet beauty lived and died with him.

‘ Bonnet nor veil henceforth no creature wear!  
Nor sun nor wind will ever strive to kiss you:

Having no fair<sup>1</sup> to lose, you need not fear;  
 The sun doth scorn you, and the wind doth kiss  
 you:

But when Adonis lived, sun and sharp air  
 Lark'd like two thieves, to rob him of his  
 fair;

‘ And therefore would he put his bonnet on,  
 Under whose brim the gandy sun would peep;  
 The wind would blow it off, and, being gone,  
 Play with his locks; then would Adonis weep:  
 And, straight, in pity of his tender years,  
 They both would strive who first should dry his  
 tears.

‘ To see his face, the lion walk'd along  
 Behind some hedge, because he would not fear<sup>2</sup>  
 him:  
 To recreate himself, when he hath sung,  
 The tiger would be tame, and gently hear him:  
 If he had spoke, the wolf would leave his prey,  
 And never fright the silly lamb that day.

‘ When he beheld his shadow in the brook,  
 The fishes spread on it their golden gills;  
 When he was by, the birds such pleasure took,  
 That some would sing, some other in their bills

---

<sup>1</sup> Beauty

<sup>2</sup> Terrify.

Would bring him mulberries, and ripe-red cherries :

He fed them with his sight, they him with berries.

‘ But this foul, grim, and urchin-snouted<sup>1</sup> boar,  
Whose downward eye still looketh for a grave,  
Ne’er saw the beauteous livery that he wore :  
Witness the entertainment that he gave.

If he did see his face, why, then I know,  
He thought to kiss him, and hath kill’d him so.

‘ ’Tis true, ’tis true ; thus was Adonis slain :  
He ran upon the boar with his sharp spear.  
Who did not whet his teeth at him again,  
But by a kiss thought to persuade him there ;  
And, nuzzling in his tank, the loving swine  
Sheathed, unaware, the tusk in his soft groin.

‘ Had I been tooth’d like him, I must confess,  
With kissing him I should have kill’d him first ;  
But he is dead, and never did he bless  
My youth with his ; the more am I accursed.’

With this she falleth in the place she stood,  
And stains her face with his congealed blood.

She looks upon his lips, and they are pale ;  
She takes him by the hand, and that is cold ;

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. snouted like a hedgehog.

She whispers in his ears a heavy tale,  
As if they heard the woful words she told :  
She lifts the coffer-lids that close his eyes,  
Where, lo ! two lamps, burnt out, in darkness  
lies :

Two glasses, where herself herself beheld  
A thousand times, and now no more reflect ;  
Their virtue lost, wherein they late excell'd ;  
And every beauty robb'd of his effect.

‘ Wonder of time,’ quoth she, ‘ this is my  
spite ;

That, you being dead, the day should yet be  
light.

‘ Since thou art dead, lo ! here I prophesy,  
Sorrow on love hereafter shall attend ;  
It shall be waited on with jealousy ;  
Find sweet beginning, but unsavory end ;  
Ne'er settled equally, but high or low ;  
That all love's pleasure shall not match his  
woe :

‘ It shall be fickle, false, and full of fraud ;  
Bud and be blasted in a breathing-while ;  
The bottom poison, and the top o'erstraw'd  
With sweets, that shall the truest sight beguile :  
The strongest body shall it make most weak,  
Strike the wise dumb, and teach the fool to  
speak :

‘ It shall be sparing, and too full of riot,  
 Teaching decrepit age to tread the measures :<sup>1</sup>  
 The staring ruffian shall it keep in quiet,  
 Pluck down the rich, enrich the poor with treasures :

It shall be raging-mad, and silly-mild ;  
 Make the young old, the old become a child :

‘ It shall suspect where is no cause of fear ;  
 It shall not fear where it should most mistrust ;  
 It shall be merciful, and too severe ;  
 And most deceiving when it seems most just :  
 Perverse it shall be where it shows most toward ;  
 Put fear to valor, courage to the coward :

‘ It shall be cause of war and dire events,  
 And set dissension 'twixt the son and sire ;  
 Subject and servile to all discontents,  
 As dry combustious matter is to fire :  
 Sith in his prime death doth my love destroy,  
 They that love best their loves shall not enjoy.’

By this, the boy, that by her side lay kill'd,  
 Was melted like a vapor from her sight ;  
 And in his blood, that on the ground lay spill'd,  
 A purple flower sprung up, checker'd with white,  
 Resembling well his pale cheeks, and the blood,  
 Which in round drops upon their whiteness stood.

---

<sup>1</sup> A measure was a slow and stately dance.

She bows her head, the new-sprung flower to smell,  
Comparing it to her Adonis' breath ;  
And says, within her bosom it shall dwell,  
Since he himself is reft from her by death :

She crops the stalk, and in the breach appears  
Green dropping sap, which she compares to  
tears.

‘ Poor flower ! ’ quoth she, ‘ this was thy father’s  
guise,

(Sweet issue of a more sweet-smelling sire)

For every little grief to wet his eyes :

To grow unto himself was his deaire,

And so ’tis thine ; but know, it is as good  
To wither in my breast, as in his blood.

‘ Here was thy father’s bed, here in my breast ;  
Thou art the next of blood, and ’tis thy right :  
Lo ! in this hollow cradle take thy rest ;  
My throbbing heart shall rock thee day and night :  
There shall not be one minute in an hour,  
Wherein I will not kiss my sweet love’s flower.’

Thus, weary of the world, away she hies,  
And yokes her silver doves ; by whose swift aid,  
Their mistress mounted, through the empty skies  
In her light chariot quickly is convey’d,

Holding their course to Paphos, where their  
queen

Means to immure herself, and not be seen.

**THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.**



**HISTORICAL NOTICE****OF****THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.**

---

Painter has inserted the story of Lucrece in the first volume of his *Palace of Pleasure*, 1567, on which our author is supposed to have formed this poem, which was entered on the books of the Stationers' Company, May 9th, 1594, and was first printed in quarto in the same year. It was again published in 8vo. in 1598, 1600, and 1607. In 1616 another edition appeared, which in the title-page is said to be 'newly revised and corrected;' although it is pronounced by Malone to be the most inaccurate and corrupt of all the ancient copies; and bearing evident marks of the revisal of another hand.



THE EPISTLE.

---

TO THE

RIGHT HONORABLE HENRY WRIOTHESELY,  
EARL OF SOUTHAMPTON, AND BARON OF TICHLFIELD.

The love I dedicate to your lordship is without end ; whereof this pamphlet, without beginning, is but a superfluous moiety. The warrant I have of your honorable disposition, not the worth of my untutored lines, makes it assured of acceptance. What I have done is yours, what I have to do is yours ; being part in all I have, devoted yours. Were my worth greater, my duty would show greater : meantime, as it is, it is bound to your lordship, to whom I wish long life, still lengthened with happiness.

Your lordship's in all duty,

WILLIAM SHAKSPEARE.



# THE RAPE OF LUCRECE.

---

## ARGUMENT.<sup>1</sup>

Lucius Tarquinius, for his excessive pride surnamed Superbus, after he had caused his own father-in-law, Servius Tullius, to be cruelly murdered, and, contrary to the Roman laws and customs, not requiring or staying for the people's suffrages, had possessed himself of the kingdom;—went, accompanied with his sons and other noblemen of Rome, to besiege Ardea; during which siege, the principal men of the army meeting one evening at the tent of Sextus Tarquinius, the king's son, in their discourses after supper, every one commended the virtues of his own wife; among whom, Collatinus extolled the incomparable chastity of his wife Lucretia. In that pleasant humor they all posted to Rome; and intending, by their secret and sudden arrival, to make trial of that which every one had before avouched, only Collatinus finds his wife, though it were late in the night, spinning amongst her maids: the other ladies were all found dancing and revelling, or in several disports: whereupon the noblemen yielded Collatinus the victory, and his wife the fame. At that time Sextus Tarquinius, being inflamed with Lucrece' beauty, yet smothering his passions for the present, departed with the rest back to the camp; from whence he shortly after privily withdrew himself, and was, according to his estate, royally entertained and lodged by Lucrece at Collatium. The same night, he

---

<sup>1</sup> This argument appears to have been written by Shakespeare, being prefixed to the original edition of 1594.

treacherously stealth into her chamber, violently ravished her, and early in the morning speedeth away. Lucrece, in this lamentable plight, hastily despatcheth messengers, one to Rome for her father, another to the camp for Collatine. They came, the one accompanied with Junius Brutus, the other with Publius Valerius; and finding Lucrece attired in mourning habit, demanded the cause of her sorrow. She, first taking an oath of them for her revenge, revealed the actor, and whole manner of his dealing, and withal suddenly stabbed herself: which done, with one consent they all vowed to root out the whole hated family of the Tarquins; and bearing the dead body to Rome, Brutus acquainted the people with the doer and manner of the vile deed, with a bitter invective against the tyranny of the king: wherewith the people were so moved, that with one consent and a general acclamation, the Tarquins were all exiled, and the state government changed from kings to consuls.

---

FROM the besieged Ardea all in post,  
Borne by the trustless wings of false desire,  
Lust-breathed Tarquin leaves the Roman host,  
And to Collatium bears the lightless fire,  
Which, in pale embers hid, lurks to aspire,  
And girdle with embracing flames the waist  
Of Collatine's fair love, Lucrece the chaste.

Haply that name of chaste unhappy set  
This bateless edge on his keen appetite;  
When Collatine unwisely did not let<sup>1</sup>  
To praise the clear unmatched red and white.

---

<sup>1</sup> Forbear.

Which triumph'd in that sky of his delight,  
Where mortal stars, as bright as heaven's beau-  
ties,  
With pure aspects did him peculiar duties.

For he the night before, in Tarquin's tent,  
Unlock'd the treasure of his happy state ;  
What priceless wealth the Heavens had him lent  
In the possession of his beauteous mate ;  
Reckoning his fortune at such high-proud rate,  
That kings might be espoused to more fame,  
But king nor peer to such a peerless dame.

O. happiness enjoy'd but of a few !  
And, if possess'd, as soon decay'd and done  
As is the morning's silver-melting dew  
Against the golden splendor of the sun !  
An expired date, cancell'd ere well begun !  
Honor and beauty, in the owner's arms,  
Are weakly fortress'd from a world of harm.

Beauty itself doth of itself persuade  
The eyes of men without an orator :  
What needeth then apology be made  
To set forth that which is so singular ?  
Or why is Collatine the publisher  
Of that rich jewel he should keep unknown  
From thievish ears, because it is his own :

Perchance, his boast of Lucrece' sovereignty  
Suggested<sup>1</sup> this proud issue of a king :  
For by our ears our hearts oft tainted be :  
Perchance, that envy of so rich a thing,  
Braving compare, disdainfully did sting  
His high-pitch'd thoughts, that meaner men  
should vaunt  
That golden hap which their superiors want.

But some untimely thought did instigate  
His all-too-timeless speed, if none of those :  
His honor, his affairs, his friends, his state,  
Neglected all, with swift intent he goes  
To quench the coal which in his liver glows.  
O, rash-false heat, wrapp'd in repentant cold,  
Thy hasty spring still blasts, and ne'er grows  
old !

When at Collatium this false lord arrived,  
Well was he welcomed by the Roman dame,  
Within whose face beauty and virtue strived  
Which of them both should underprop her fame.  
When virtue bragg'd, beauty would blush for  
shame ;  
When beauty boasted blushes, in despite  
Virtue would stain that o'er with silver white.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tempted.

But beauty, in that white intituled,<sup>1</sup>  
From Venus' doves doth challenge that fair field ;  
Then virtue claims from beauty beauty's red,  
Which virtue gave the golden age, to gild  
Their silver cheeks, and call'd it then their shield ;  
Teaching them thus to use it in the fight ;—  
When shame assail'd, the red should fence the  
white.

This heraldry in Lucrece' face was seen,  
Argued by beauty's red and virtue's white.  
Of either's color was the other queen,  
Proving from world's minority their right :  
Yet their ambition makes them still to fight ;  
The sovereignty of either being so great,  
That oft they interchange each other's seat.

This silent war of lilies and of roses,  
Which Tarquin view'd in her fair face's field,  
In their pure ranks his traitor eye encloses ;  
Where, lest between them both it should be kill'd,  
The coward captive vanquished doth yield  
To those two armies, that would let him go,  
Rather than triumph in so false a foe.

Now thinks he that her husband's shallow tongue  
(The niggard prodigal that praised her so)

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. which consists in that whiteness, or takes its title  
from it.

In that high task hath done her beauty wrong,  
 Which far exceeds his barren skill to show :  
 Therefore that praise<sup>1</sup> which Collatine doth owe,  
 Enchanted Tarquin answers with surmise,  
 In silent wonder of still-gazing eyes.

This earthly saint, adored by this devil,  
 Little suspecteth the false worshipper ;  
 For unstain'd thoughts do seldom dream on evil ;  
 Birds never limed no secret bushes fear :  
 So guiltless she securely gives good cheer  
 And reverend welcome to her princely guest,  
 Whose inward ill no outward harm express'd :

For that he color'd with his high estate.  
 Hiding base sin in plaits of majesty ;  
 That nothing in him seem'd inordinate,  
 Save sometime too much wonder of his eye,  
 Which, having all, all could not satisfy ;  
 But, poorly rich, so wanteth in his store,  
 That, cloy'd with much, he pineth still for more.

But she, that never coped with stranger eyes,  
 Could pick no meaning from their parling looks,  
 Nor read the subtle-shining secrésies  
 Writ in the glassy margents of such books :  
 She touch'd no unknown baits, nor fear'd no hooks ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Praise bere signifies the object of praise, i. e. Lucretia. Own, possess.

Nor could she moralise<sup>1</sup> his wanton sight,  
More than his eyes were open'd to the light.

He stories to her ears her husband's fame,  
Won in the fields of fruitful Italy ;  
And decks with praises Collatine's high name,  
Made glorious by his manly chivalry,  
With bruised arms, and wreaths of victory.

Her joy with heaved-up hand she doth express ;  
And, wordless so, greets Heaven for his success.

Far from the purpose of his coming thither,  
He makes excuses for his being there :  
No cloudy show of stormy, blustering weather  
Doth yet in his fair welkin once appear ;  
Till sable Night, mother of Dread and Fear,  
Upon the world dim darkness doth display,  
And in her vaulty prison stows the day :

For then is Tarquin brought unto his bed,  
Intending<sup>2</sup> weariness with heavy spright ;  
For, after supper, long he questioned  
With modest Lucrece, and wore out the night.  
Now leaden slumber with life's strength doth  
fight ;  
And every one to rest himself betakes,  
Save thieves, and cares, and troubled minds, that  
wakes.

---

<sup>1</sup> Interpret.

<sup>2</sup> Pretending.

As one of which, doth Tarquin lie revolving  
The sundry dangers of his will's obtaining ;  
Yet ever to obtain his will resolving,  
Though weak-built hopes persuade him to abstaining :

Despair to gain, doth traffic oft for gaining :

And when great treasure is the meed proposed,

Though death be adjunct, there's no death supposed.

Those that much covet, are with gain so fond,  
That what they have not, that which they possess,  
They scatter and unloose it from their bond,  
And so, by hoping more, they have but less ;  
Or, gaining more, the profit of excess  
Is but to surfeit, and such griefs sustain,  
That they prove bankrupt in this poor-rich gain.

The aim of all is but to nurse the life  
With honor, wealth, and ease, in waning age ;  
And in this aim there is such thwarting strife,  
That one for all, or all for one we gage :  
As life for honor, in fell battle's rage ;  
Honor for wealth ; and oft that wealth doth cost  
The death of all, and all together lost.

So that, in venturing ill, we leave to be  
The things we are, for that which we expect ;  
And this ambitious, foul infirmity,  
In having much, torments us with defect  
Of that we have : so then we do neglect

The thing we have, and, all for want of wit,  
Make something nothing, by augmenting it.

Such hazard now must doting Tarquin make,  
Pawning his honor to obtain his lust;  
And for himself, himself he must forsake :  
Then where is truth, if there be no self-trust ?  
When shall he think to find a stranger just,  
When he himself himself confounds, betrays  
To slanderous tongues, and wretched, hateful  
days ?

Now stole upon the time the dead of night,  
When heavy sleep had closed up mortal eyes :  
No comfortable star did lend his light ;  
No noise but owls' and wolves' death-boding cries :  
Now serves the season that they may surprise  
The silly lambs ; pure thoughts are dead and  
still,  
While Lust and Murder wake to stain and kill.

And now this lustful lord leap'd from his bed,  
Throwing his mantle rudely o'er his arm ;  
Is madly toss'd between desire and dread ;  
The one sweetly flatters, the other feareth harm :  
But honest Fear, bewitch'd with lust's foul charm,  
Doth too too oft betake him to retire,  
Beaten away by brainsick, rude Desire.

His falchion on a flint he softly smiteth,  
That from the cold stone sparks of fire do fly ;

Whereat a waxen torch forthwith he lighteth,  
Which must be loadstar to his lustful eye;  
And to the flame thus speaks advisedly:—

‘ As from this cold flint I enforced this fire,  
So Lucrece must I force to my desire.’

Here pale with fear he doth premeditate  
The dangers of his loathsome enterprise,  
And in his inward mind he doth debate  
What following sorrow may on this arise:  
Then looking scornfully, he doth despise  
His naked armour of still-slaughter’d lust,  
And justly thus controls his thoughts unjust:—

‘ Fair torch, burn out thy light, and lend it not  
To darken her whose light excelleth thine!  
And die, unhallow’d thoughts, before you blot  
With your uncleanness that which is divine!  
Offer pure incense to so pure a shrine:  
Let fair humanity abhor the deed  
That spots and stains love’s modest, snow-white  
weed.

‘ O, shame to knighthood and to shining arms!  
O, foul dishonor to my household’s grave!  
O, impious act, including all foul harms!  
A martial man to be soft fancy’s<sup>1</sup> slave!  
True valor still a true respect should have:

---

<sup>1</sup> Love’s.

Then my digression is so vile, so base,  
That it will live engraven in my face.

• Yea, though I die, the scandal will survive,  
And be an eyesore in my golden coat;  
Some loathsome dash the herald will contrive,  
To cipher me, how fondly I did dote;  
That my posterity, shamed with the note,  
Shall curse my bones, and hold it for no sin  
To wish that I their father had not been.

• What win I, if I gain the thing I seek?  
A dream, a breath, a froth of fleeting joy.  
Who buys a minute's mirth, to wail a week?  
Or sells eternity, to get a toy?  
For one sweet grape who will the vine destroy?  
Or what fond beggar, but to touch the crown,  
Would with the sceptre straight be stricken  
down?

• If Collatinus dream of my intent,  
Will he not wake, and in a desperate rage  
Post hither, this vile purpose to prevent?  
This siege that hath engirt his marriage,  
This blur to youth, this sorrow to the sage,  
This dying virtue, this surviving shame,  
Whose crime will bear an ever-during blame?

• O, what excuse can my invention make.  
When thou shalt charge me with so black a  
deed?

Will not my tongue be mute, my frail joints shake ?  
 Mine eyes forego their light, my false heart bleed ?  
 The guilt being great, the fear doth still exceed ;  
 And extreme fear can neither fight nor fly,  
 But, coward-like, with trembling terror die.

‘ Had Collatinus kill’d my son or sire,  
 Or lain in ambush to betray my life,  
 Or were he not my dear friend, this desire  
 Might have excuse to work upon his wife ;  
 As in revenge or quittal of such strife :  
 But as he is my kinsman, my dear friend,  
 The shame and fault finds no excuse nor end.

‘ Shameful it is ?—ay, if the fact be known :  
 Hateful it is ?—there is no hate in loving :  
 I ’ll beg her love :—but she is not her own ?  
 The worst is but denial, and reproving :  
 My will is strong, past reason’s weak removing.  
 Who fears a sentence or an old man’s saw,  
 Shall by a painted cloth<sup>1</sup> be kept in awe.’

Thus, graceless, holds he disputation  
 ’Tween frozen conscience and hot-burning will,  
 And with good thoughts makes dispensation,  
 Urging the worser sense for vantage still ;  
 Which in a moment doth confound and kill

---

<sup>1</sup> In the old tapestries, or painted cloths, moral sentences were usually wrought.

All pure effects, and doth so far proceed,  
 'That what is vile shows like a virtuous deed.

Quoth he, ' She took me kindly by the hand,  
 And gazed for tidings in my eager eyes,  
 Fearing some hard news from the warlike band,  
 Where her beloved Collatinus lies.

O, how her fear did make her color rise !  
 First red as roses, that on lawn we lay ;  
 Then white as lawn, the roses took away.

' And how her hand, in my hand being lock'd,  
 Forced it to tremble with her loyal fear !  
 Which struck her sad, and then it faster rock'd,  
 Until her husband's welfare she did hear ;  
 Whereat she smiled with so sweet a cheer,  
 That had Narcissus seen her as she stood,  
 Self-love had never drown'd him in the flood.

' Why hunt I then for color or excuses ?  
 All orators are dumb when beauty pleadeth ;  
 Poor wretches have remorse in poor abuses ;  
 Love thrives not in the heart that shadows dreadeth :  
 Affection is my captain, and he leadeth ;  
 And when his gaudy banner is display'd,  
 The coward fights, and will not be dismay'd.

' Then, childish fear, avaunt ! debating, die !  
 Respect<sup>1</sup> and reason, wait on wrinkled age !

---

<sup>1</sup> Respect here means cautious prudence.

My heart shall never countermand mine eye :  
Sad pause and deep regard beseem the sage ;  
My part is youth, and beats these from the  
stage :

Desire my pilot is, beauty my prize ;  
Then who fears sinking where such treasure  
lies ? '

As corn o'ergrown by weeds, so heedful fear  
Is almost choked by unresisted lust.  
Away he steals with open, listening ear,  
Full of foul hope, and full of fond mistrust ;  
Both which, as servitors to the unjust,  
So cross him with their opposite persuasion,  
That now he vows a league, and now invasion.

Within his thought her heavenly image sits,  
And in the selfsame seat sits Collatine :  
That eye which looks on her, confounds his wits ;  
That eye which him beholds, as more divine,  
Unto a view so false will not incline ;  
But with a pure appeal seeks to the heart,  
Which once corrupted, takes the worser part ;

And therein heartens up his servile powers ;  
Who, flatter'd by their leader's jocund show,  
Stuff up his lust, as minutes fill up hours ;  
And as their captain, so their pride doth grow,  
Paying more slavish tribute than they owe.  
By reprobate desire thus madly led.  
The Roman lord marcheth to Lucrece' bed.

The locks between her chamber and his will,  
 Each one by him enforced, retires his ward ;  
 But as they open, they all rate his ill,  
 Which drives the creeping thief to some regard :  
 The threshold grates the door to have him heard :  
 Night-wandering weasels shriek to see him  
     there ;  
 They fright him, yet he still pursues his fear.

As each unwilling portal yields him way,  
 Through little vents and crannies of the place  
 The wind wars with his torch, to make him stay,  
 And blows the smoke of it into his face,  
 Extinguishing his conduct<sup>1</sup> in this case :  
 But his hot heart, which fond desire doth  
     scorch,  
 Puffs forth another wind that fires the torch :

And, being lighted, by the light he spies  
 Lucretia's glove, wherein her needle sticks :  
 He takes it from the rushes<sup>2</sup> where it lies ;  
 And, griping it, the neeld<sup>3</sup> his finger pricks :  
 As who should say, This glove to wanton tricks  
     Is not inured ; return again in haste :  
 Thou seest our mistress' ornaments are chaste.

<sup>1</sup> Conduct for conductor.

<sup>2</sup> Apartments in England were strewed with rushes in the time of our author.

<sup>3</sup> Neeld for needle.

But all these poor forbiddings could not stay him :  
He in the worst sense construes their denial :  
The doors, the wind, the glove, that did delay him,  
He takes for accidental things of trial ;  
Or as those bars which stop the hourly dial,  
Who with a lingering stay his course doth let,<sup>1</sup>  
Till every minute pays the hour his debt.

So, so,' quoth he, ' these lets attend the time,  
Like little frosts that sometime threat the spring,  
To add a more rejoicing to the prime,  
And give the sneaped <sup>2</sup> birds more cause to sing.  
Pain pays the income of each precious thing :  
Huge rocks, high winds, strong pirates, shelves  
and sands,  
The merchant fears, ere rich at home he lands.'

Now is he come unto the chamber door,  
That shuts him from the heaven of his thought ;  
Which with a yielding latch, and with no more,  
Hath barr'd him from the blessed thing he sought.  
So from himself impiety hath wrought,  
That for his prey to pray he doth begin,  
As if the Heavens should countenance his sin.

But in the midst of his unfruitful prayer,  
Having solicited the eternal Power,

---

<sup>1</sup> Hinder.

<sup>2</sup> Checked.

That his foul thoughts might compass his fair fair,  
And they would stand auspicious to the hour ;—  
Even there he starts :—quoth he, ‘ I must deflour :  
The powers, to whom I pray, abhor this fact ;  
How can they then assist me in the act ?

‘ Then Love and Fortune be my gods, my guide !  
My will is back’d with resolution :  
Thoughts are but dreams till their effects be tried ;  
The blackest sin is clear’d with absolution :  
Against love’s fire fear’s frost hath dissolution.  
The eye of heaven is out, and misty night  
Covers the shame that follows sweet delight.’

This said, his guilty hand pluck’d up the latch,  
And with his knee the door he opens wide :  
The dove sleeps fast that this night-owl will catch ;  
Thus treason works ere traitors be espied.  
Who sees the lurking serpent, steps aside ;  
But she, sound sleeping, fearing no such thing,  
Lies at the mercy of his mortal sting.

Into the chamber wickedly he stalks,  
And gazeth on her yet unstained bed :  
The curtains being close, about he walks,  
Rolling his greedy eyeballs in his head :  
By their high treason is his heart misled ;  
Which gives the watchword to his hand fuli  
soon,  
To draw the cloud that hides the silver moon.

Look, as the fair and fiery-pointed sun,  
Rushing from forth a cloud, bereaves our sight ;  
Even so, the curtain drawn, his eyes begun  
To wink, being blinded with a greater light :  
Whether it is, that she reflects so bright,  
That dazzleth them, or else some shame supposed ;  
But blind they are, and keep themselves enclosed.

O, had they in that darksome prison died,  
Then had they seen the period of their ill !  
Then Collatine again, by Lucrece' side,  
In his clear bed might have reposed still :  
But they must ope, this blessed league to kill ;  
And holy-thoughted Lucrece to their sight  
Must sell her joy, her life, her world's delight.

Her lily hand her rosy cheek lies under,  
Cozening the pillow of a lawful kiss ;  
Who, therefore angry, seems to part in sunder,  
Swelling on either side, to want his bliss ;  
Between whose hills her head entombed is :  
Where, like a virtuous monument, she lies,  
To be admired of lewd, unhallow'd eyes.

Without the bed her other fair hand was,  
On the green coverlet ; whose perfect white  
Show'd like an April daisy on the grass,  
With pearly sweat, resembling dew of night.  
Her eyes, like marigolds, had sheathed their light ;

And, canopied in darkness, sweetly lay,  
Till they might open to adorn the day.

Her hair, like golden threads, play'd with her  
breath;

O, modest wantons! wanton modesty!  
Showing life's triumph in the map of death,  
And death's dim look in life's mortality:  
Each in her sleep themselves so beautify,

As if between them twain there were no strife,  
But that life lived in death, and death in life.

Her breasts, like ivory globes circled with blue,  
A pair of maiden worlds unconquered;  
Save of their lord, no bearing yoke they knew,  
And him by oath they truly honored.

These worlds in Tarquin new ambition bred;  
Who, like a foul usurper, went about  
From this fair throne to heave the owner out.

What could he see, but mightily he noted?  
What did he note, but strongly he desired?  
What he beheld, on that he firmly doted;  
And in his will his wilful eye he tired.  
With more than admiration he admired  
Her azure veins, her alabaster skin,  
Her coral lips, her snow-white, dimpled chin.

As the grim lion fawneth o'er his prey,  
Sharp hunger by the conquest satisfied,

So o'er this sleeping soul doth Tarquin stay,  
His rage of lust by gazing qualified ;  
Slack'd, not suppress'd ; for standing by her side  
His eye, which late this mutiny restrains,  
Unto a greater uproar tempts his veins :

And they, like straggling slaves for pillage fighting,  
Obdurate vassals, fell exploits effecting,  
In bloody death and ravishment delighting.  
Nor children's tears nor mother's groans respecting,  
Swell in their pride, the onset still expecting :  
Anon his beating heart, alarum striking,  
Gives the hot charge, and bids them do their  
liking.

His drumming heart cheers up his burning eye ;  
His eye commends the leading to his hand ;  
His hand, as proud of such a dignity,  
Smoking with pride, march'd on to make his stand  
On her bare breast, the heart of all her land ;  
Whose ranks of blue veins, as his hand did scale,  
Left their round turrets destitute and pale.

They, mustering to the quiet cabinet  
Where their dear governess and lady lies,  
Do tell her she is dreadfully beset,  
And fright her with confusion of their cries.  
She, much amazed, breaks ope her lock'd-up eyes.  
Who, peeping forth this tumult to oenoid.  
Are by his flaming torch dimm'd and controll'd.

Imagine her, as one in dead of night  
From forth dull sleep by dreadful fancy waking.  
That thinks she hath beheld some ghastly sprite,  
Whose grim aspect sets every joint a shaking;  
What terror 'tis! but she, in worser taking,  
From sleep disturbed, heedfully doth view  
The sight which makes supposed terror true.

Wrapp'd and confounded in a thousand fears,  
Like to a new-kill'd bird she trembling lies:  
She dares not look; yet, winking, there appears  
Quick-shifting antics, ugly in her eyes:  
Such shadows are the weak brain's forgeries;  
Who, angry that the eyes fly from their lights,  
In darkness daunts them with more dreadful  
sights.

His hand, that yet remains upon her breast,  
(Rude ram, to batter such an ivory wall!)  
May feel her heart, (poor citizen!) distress'd,  
Wounding itself to death, rise up and fall,  
Beating her bulk,<sup>1</sup> that his hand shakes withal.  
This moves in him more rage, and lesser pity,  
To make the breach, and enter this sweet city.

First, like a trumpet, doth his tongue begin  
To sound a parley to his heartless foe,

---

Who o'er the white sheet peers her whiter chin,  
The reason of this rash alarm to know,  
Which he by dumb demeanor seeks to show :  
But she with vehement prayers urgeth still,  
Under what color he commits this ill.

Thus he replies :—' The color in thy face  
(That even for anger makes the lily pale,  
And the red rose blush at her own disgrace)  
Shall plead for me, and tell my loving tale :  
Under that color am I come to scale  
Thy never-conquer'd fort ; the fault is thine,  
For those thine eyes betray thee unto mine.

• Thus I forestall thee, if thou mean to chide :  
Thy beauty hath ensnared thee to this night,  
Where thou with patience must my will abide,—  
My will, that marks thee for my earth's delight,  
Which I to conquer sought with all my might ;  
But as reproof and reason beat it dead,  
By thy bright beauty was it newly bred.

• I see what crosses my attempt will bring ;  
I know what thorns the growing rose defends ;  
I think the honey guarded with a sting :  
All this, beforehand, counsel comprehends :  
But will is deaf, and hears no heedful friends ;  
Only he hath an eye to gaze on beauty,  
And dotes on what he looks, 'gainst law or  
duty.

‘ I have debated, even in my soul,  
What wrong, what shame, what sorrow I shall  
breed ;  
But nothing can affection’s course control,  
Or stop the headlong fury of his speed.  
I know repentant tears ensue the deed,  
Reproach, disdain, and deadly enmity ;  
Yet strive I to embrace mine infamy.’

This said, he shakes aloft his Roman blade,  
Which, like a falcon towering in the skies,  
Coucheth the fowl below with his wings’ shade,  
Whose crooked beak threats, if he mount he  
dies :

So under his insulting falchion lies  
Harmless Lucretia, marking what he tells  
With trembling fear, as fowl hear falcons’ bells.

‘ Lucrece,’ quoth he, ‘ this night I must enjoy thee :  
If thou deny, then force must work my way,  
For in thy bed I purpose to destroy thee ;  
That done, some worthless slave of thine I ’ll slay,  
To kill thine honor with thy life’s decay :  
And in thy dead arms do I mean to place him,  
Swearing I slew him, seeing thee embrace him :

‘ So thy surviving husband shall remain  
The scornful mark of every open eye ;  
Thy kinsmen hang their heads at this disdain ;  
Thy issue blurr’d with nameless bastardy :  
And thou, the author of their obloquy,

Shalt have thy trespass cited up in rhymes,  
And sung by children in succeeding times.

‘ But if thou yield, I rest thy secret friend :  
The fault unknown is as a thought unacted ;  
A little harm, done to a great, good end,  
For lawful policy remains enacted.

The poisonous simple sometimes is compacted  
In a pure compound ; being so applied,  
His venom in effect is purified.

‘ Then for thy husband and thy children’s sake,  
Tender<sup>1</sup> my suit : bequeathe not to their lot  
The shame that from them no device can take,  
The blemish that will never be forgot ;  
Worse than a slavish wipe, or birth-hour’s blot :  
For marks descried in men’s nativity  
Are nature’s faults, not their own infamy.’

Here with a cockatrice<sup>2</sup> dead-killing eye  
He rouseth up himself, and makes a pause ;  
While she, the picture of pure piety,  
Like a white hind under the grype’s<sup>2</sup> sharp  
claws,  
Pleads in a wilderness, where are no laws,  
To the rough beast that knows no gentle right.  
Nor aught obeys but his foul appetite.

<sup>1</sup> Regard.

<sup>2</sup> The griffin’s or vulture’s.

Look, when a black-faced cloud the world doth  
threat,  
In his dim mist the aspiring mountains hiding,  
From earth's dark womb some gentle gust doth get  
Which blows these pitchy vapors from their biding,  
Hindering their present fall by this dividing ;  
So his unhallow'd haste her words delays,  
And moody Pluto winks while Orpheus plays.

Yet, foul, night-waking cat, he doth but dally,  
While in his holdfast foot the weak mouse panteth ;  
Her sad behavior feeds his vulture folly ;  
A swallowing gulf, that even in plenty wanteth :  
His ear her prayers admits, but his heart granteth  
No penetrable entrance to her plaining :  
Tears harden lust, though marble wear with  
raining.

Her pity-pleading eyes are sadly fix'd  
In the remorseless wrinkles of his face ;  
Her modest eloquence with sighs is mix'd,  
Which to her oratory adds more grace.  
She puts the period often from his place,  
And 'midst the sentence so her accent breaks,  
That twice she doth begin ere once she speaks.

She conjures him by high almighty Jove,  
By knighthood, gentry, and sweet friendship's oat'h,  
By her untimely tears, her husband's love,  
By holy human law, and common troth,  
By heaven and earth, and all the power of both,

That to his borrow'd bed he make retire,  
And stoop to honor, not to foul desire.

Quoth she,—‘ Reward not hospitality  
With such black payment as thou hast pretended ;<sup>1</sup>  
Mud not the fountain that gave drink to thee :  
Mar not the thing that cannot be amended :  
End thy ill aim, before thy shoot be ended.

He is no woodman, that doth bend his bow  
To strike a poor, unseasonable doe.

‘ My husband is thy friend, for his sake spare  
me ;  
Thyself art mighty, for thine own sake leave me ;  
Myself a weakling, do not then ensnare me :  
Thou look’st not like deceit ; do not deceive me :  
My sighs, like whirlwinds, labor hence to heave  
thee.

If ever man were moved with woman’s moans,  
Be moved with my tears, my sighs, my groans :

‘ All which together, like a troubled ocean,  
Beat at thy rocky and wreck-threatening heart,  
To soften it with their continual motion ;  
For stones dissolved to water do convert.  
O, if no harder than a stone thou art,  
Melt at my tears, and be compassionate !  
Soft pity enters at an iron gate.

---

<sup>1</sup> Intended, proposed to thyself.

• In Tarquin's likeness I did entertain thee :  
 Hast thou put on his shape to do him shame ?  
 To all the host of heaven I complain me,  
 Thou wrong'st his honor, wound'st his princely  
 name.

Thou art not what thou seem'st ; and if the  
 same,

Thou seem'st not what thou art, a god, a king ;  
 For kings, like gods, should govern every thing.

• How will thy shame be seeded in thine age,  
 When thus thy vices bud before thy spring ?  
 If in thy hope thou darest do such outrage,  
 What darest thou not when once thou art a  
 king ?

O, be remember'd,<sup>1</sup> no outrageous thing  
 From vassal actors can be wiped away ;  
 Then kings' misdeeds cannot be hid in clay.

• This deed will make thee only loved for fear,  
 But happy monarchs still are fear'd for love :  
 With foul offenders thou perforce must bear,  
 When they in thee the like offences prove :  
 If but for fear of this, thy will remove ;  
 For princes are the glass, the school, the book,  
 Where subjects' eyes do learn, do read, do  
 look.

---

<sup>1</sup> Bear it in your mind.

‘ And wilt thou be the school where Lust shall  
learn ?

Must he in thee read lectures of such shame ?  
Wilt thou be glass, wherein it shall discern  
Authority for sin, warrant for blame,  
To privilege dishonor in thy name ?

Thou back’st reproach against long-lived laud,  
And makest fair reputation but a bawd.

‘ Hast thou command ? by him that gave it thee,  
From a pure heart command thy rebel will :  
Draw not thy sword to guard iniquity,  
For it was lent thee all that brood to kill.  
Thy princely office how canst thou fulfil,

When, pattern’d by thy fault, foul Sin may  
say,

He learn’d to sin, and thou didst teach the  
way ?

‘ Think but how vile a spectacle it were  
To view thy present trespass in another.  
Men’s faults do seldom to themselves appear ;  
Their own transgressions partially they smother :  
This guilt would seem death-worthy in thy brother.

O, how are they wrapp’d in with infamies,  
That from their own misdeeds askaunce their  
eyes !

‘ To thee, to thee, my heaved-up hands appeal,  
Not to seducing lust, thy rash relier ;

I sue for exiled majesty's repeal;  
 Let him return, and flattering thoughts retire :  
 His true respect will prison false desire,  
 And wipe the dim mist from thy doting eyne,  
 That thou shalt see thy state, and pity mine.'

' Have done,' quoth he : ' my uncontrolled tide  
 Turns not, but swells the higher by this let :<sup>1</sup>  
 Small lights are soon blown out; huge fires abide,  
 And with the wind in greater fury fret :  
 The petty streams, that pay a daily debt  
 To their salt sovereign, with their fresh falls'  
 haste,  
 Add to his flow, but alter not his taste.'

' Thou art,' quoth she, ' a sea, a sovereign king ;  
 And, lo, there falls into thy boundless flood  
 Black lust, dishonor, shame, misgoverning,  
 Who seek to stain the ocean of thy blood.  
 If all these petty ills shall change thy good,  
 Thy sea within a puddle's womb is hearsed,  
 And not the puddle in thy sea dispersed.

' So shall these slaves be king, and thou their  
 slave ;  
 Thou nobly base, they basely dignified ;  
 Thou their fair life, and they thy fouler grave ;  
 Thou loathed in their shame, they in thy pride.  
 The lesser thing should not the greater hide :

---

<sup>1</sup> Obstruction.

The cedar stoops not to the base shrub's foot.  
But low shrubs wither at the cedar's root.

' So let thy thoughts, low vassals to thy state,'—  
' No more,' quoth he: ' by heaven, I will not hear  
thee :  
Yield to my love ; if not, enforced hate,  
Instead of love's coy touch, shall rudely tear thee :  
That done, despitefully I mean to bear thee  
Unto the base bed of some rascal groom,  
To be thy partner in this shameful doom.'

This said, he sets his foot upon the light,  
For light and lust are deadly enemies :  
Shame, folded up in blind, concealing night,  
When most unseen, then most doth tyrannise.  
The wolf hath seised his prey, the poor lamb  
cries,  
Till with her own white fleece her voice controll'd  
Entombs her outcry in her lips' sweet fold :

For with the nightly linen that she wears,  
He pens her piteous clamors in her head ;  
Cooling his hot face in the chaste tears  
That ever modest eyes with sorrow shed.  
O, that prone lust should stain so pure a bed !  
The spots whereof could weeping purify,  
Her tears should drop on them perpetually.

But she hath lost a dearer thing than life,  
And he hath won what he would lose again.

This forced league doth force a farther strife ;  
This momentary joy breeds months of pain ;  
This hot desire converts to cold disdain :  
    Pure chastity is rifled of her store ;  
    And lust, the thief, far poorer than before.

Look, as the full-fed hound or gorged hawk,  
Unapt for tender smell or speedy flight,  
Make slow pursuit, or altogether balk <sup>1</sup>  
The prey, wherein by nature they delight ;  
So surfeit-taking Tarquin fares this night :  
    His taste delicious, in digestion souring,  
    Devours his will, that lived by foul devouring.

O, deeper sin than bottomless conceit  
Can comprehend in still imagination !  
Drunken Desire must vomit his receipt,  
Ere he can see his own abomination.  
While lust is in his pride, no exclamation  
    Can curb his heat, or rein his rash desire,  
    Till, like a jade, self-will himself doth tire :

And then, with lank and lean, discolor'd cheek,  
With heavy eye, knit brow, and strengthless pace,  
Feeble Desire, all recreant, poor, and meek,  
Like to a bankrupt beggar wails his case :  
The flesh being proud, Desire doth fight with  
    grace,

---

<sup>1</sup> Omit, leave.

For there it revels ; and when that decays,  
The guilty rebel for remission prays.

So fares it with this faultful lord of Rome,  
Who this accomplishment so hotly chased ;  
For now against himself he sounds this doom :—  
That through the length of times he stands disgraced :

Besides, his soul's fair temple is defaced ;  
To whose weak ruins muster troops of cares,  
To ask the spotted princess how she fares.

She says, her subjects with foul insurrection  
Have batter'd down her consecrated wall,  
And by their mortal fault brought in subjection  
Her immortality, and made her thrall  
To living death, and pain perpetual ;  
Which in her prescience she controlled still,  
But her foresight could not forestall their will.

Even in this thought, through the dark night he  
stealeth,  
A captive victor, that hath lost in gain ;  
Bearing away the wound that nothing healeth ;  
The scar that will, despite of cure, remain,  
Leaving his spoil perplex'd in greater pain.  
She bears the load of lust he left behind,  
And he the burthen of a guilty mind.

He, like a thievish dog, creeps sadly thence ;  
She, like a wearied lamb, lies panting there :

He scowls, and hates himself for his offence;  
 She desperate, with her nails her flesh doth tear;  
 He faintly flies, sweating with guilty fear;  
 She stays, exclaiming on the direful night;  
 He runs, and chides his vanish'd, loathed de-  
 light.

He thence departs a heavy convertite;<sup>1</sup>  
 She there remains a hopeless castaway:  
 He in his speed looks for the morning light;  
 She prays she never may behold the day:  
 'For day,' quoth she, 'night's scapes doth open  
 lay;  
 And my true eyes have never practised how  
 To cloak offences with a cunning brow.

'They think not but that every eye can see  
 The same disgrace which they themselves behold;  
 And therefore would they still in darkness be,  
 To have their unseen sin remain untold:  
 For they their guilt with weeping will unfold;  
 And grave, like water, that doth eat in steel,  
 Upon my cheeks what helpless shame I feel.'

Here she exclaims against repose and rest,  
 And bids her eyes hereafter still be blind.  
 She wakes her heart by beating on her breast,

---

<sup>1</sup> Convertite for convert.

And bids it leap from thence, where it may find  
Some purer chest, to close so pure a mind.

Frantic with grief, thus breathes she forth her  
spite

Against the unseen secresy of night:—

‘ O comfort-killing night, image of hell !  
Dim register and notary of shame !  
Black stage for tragedies and murders fell !  
Vast sin-concealing chaos ! nurse of blame !  
Blind, muffled bawd ! dark harbor for defame !  
Grim cave of death ! whispering conspirator,  
With close-tongued treason and the ravisher !

‘ O hateful, vaporous, and foggy night,  
Since thou art guilty of my cureless crime,  
Muster thy mists to meet the eastern light,  
Make war against proportion’d course of time !  
Or, if thou wilt permit the sun to climb  
His wonted height, yet ere he go to bed,  
Knit poisonous clouds about his golden head.

‘ With rotten damps ravish the morning air ;  
Let their exhaled, unwholesome breaths make  
sick  
The life of purity, the supreme fair,  
Ere he arrive his weary noontide prick ;  
And let thy misty vapors march so thick,  
That in their smoky ranks his smother’d light  
May set at noon, and make perpetual night.

‘ Were Tarquin night, (as he is but night’s child)  
The silver-shining queen he would distain ;  
Her twinkling handmaids too, by him defiled,  
Through night’s black bosom should not peep  
again ;

So should I have copartners in my pain :  
And fellowship in woe doth woe assuage,  
As palmers’ chat makes short their pilgrimage.

‘ Where<sup>1</sup> now I have no one to blush with me,  
To cross their arms, and hang their heads with  
mine,

To mask their brows, and hide their infamy ;  
But I alone, alone must sit and pine,  
Seasoning the earth with showers of silver brine ;  
Mingling my talk with tears, my grief with  
groans,  
Poor wasting monuments of lasting moans.

‘ O night, thou furnace of foul-reeking smoke,  
Let not the jealous day behold that face  
Which, underneath thy black, all-hiding cloak,  
Immodestly lies martyr’d with disgrace !  
Keep still possession of thy gloomy place ;  
That all the faults, which in thy reign are  
made,  
May likewise be sepulchred in thy shade !

---

<sup>1</sup> Whereas.

‘ Make me not object to the tell-tale day !  
 The light will show, character’d in my brow,  
 The story of sweet chastity’s decay,  
 The impious breach of holy wedlock vow :  
 Yea, the illiterate, that know not how  
 To ’cipher what is writ in learned books,  
 Will quote<sup>1</sup> my loathsome trespass in my looks.

‘ The nurse, to still her child, will tell my story,  
 And fright her crying babe with Tarquin’s name ;  
 The orator, to deck his oratory,  
 Will couple my reproach to Tarquin’s shame :  
 Feast-finding minstrels, tuning my defame,  
 Will tie the hearers to attend each line,  
 How Tarquin wronged me, I Collatine.

‘ Let my good name, that senseless reputation,  
 For Collatine’s dear love be kept unspotted :  
 If that be made a theme for disputation,  
 The branches of another root are rotted,  
 And undeserved reproach to him allotted,  
 That is as clear from this attaint of mine,  
 As I, ere this, was pure to Collatine.

‘ O unseen shame ! invisible disgrace !  
 O unfelt sore ! crest-wounding, private scar !  
 Reproach is stamp’d in Collatinus’ face.

---

<sup>1</sup> Observe.

And Tarquin's eye may read the mot<sup>1</sup> afar,  
How he in peace is wounded, not in war.

Alas, how many bear such shameful blows,  
Which not themselves, but he that gives them,  
knows!

‘ If, Collatine, thine honor lay in me,  
From me by strong assault it is bereft :  
My honey lost, and I, a drone-like bee,  
Have no perfection of my summer left,  
But rob'd and ransack'd by injurious theft :  
In thy weak hive a wandering wasp hath crept,  
And suck'd the honey which thy chaste bee  
kept.

‘ Yet am I guiltless of thy honor's wreck ;  
Yet for thy honor did I entertain him :  
Coming from thee, I could not put him back,  
For it had been dishonor to disdain him :  
Besides, of weariness he did complain him,  
And talk'd of virtue :—O, unlook'd-for evil,  
When virtue is profaned in such a devil !

‘ Why should the worm intrude the maiden bud ;  
Or hateful cuckoos hatch in sparrows' nests ;  
Or toads infect fair founts with venom mud ;  
Or tyrant folly lurk in gentle breasts ;  
Or kings be breakers of their own behests ?<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> i. e. motto.

<sup>2</sup> Commands.

But no perfection is so absolute.  
That some impurity doth not pollute.

' The aged man, that coffers up his gold,  
Is plagued with cramps, and gouts, and painful  
fits,  
And scarce hath eyes his treasure to behold ;  
But like still-pining Tantalus he sits,  
And useless barns the harvest of his wits ;  
Having no other pleasure of his gain,  
But torment that it cannot cure his pain.

' So then he hath it, when he cannot use it,  
And leaves it to be master'd by his young ;  
Who in their pride do presently abuse it :  
Their father was too weak, and they too strong,  
To hold their cursed-blessed fortune long.  
. The sweets we wish for turn to loathed soura,  
Even in the moment that we call them ours.

' Unruly blasts wait on the tender spring ;  
Unwholesome weeds take root with precious flowers ;  
The adder hisses where the sweet birds sing :  
What virtue breeds iniquity devours :  
We have no good that we can say is ours,  
But ill-annexed Opportunity  
Or kills his life, or else his quality.

' O, Opportunity ! thy guilt is great :  
'Tis thou that executest the traitor's treason ;  
Thou sett'st the wolf where he the lamb may get ;

Whoever plots the sin, thou 'point'st the season :  
 Tis thou that spurn'st at right, at law, at reason ;  
 And in thy shady cell, where none may spy  
 him,  
 Sits Sin, to seise the souls that wander by him.

‘ Thou makest the vestal violate her oath ;  
 Thou blow'st the fire when temperance is thaw'd ;  
 Thou smother'st honesty, thou murder'st troth ;  
 Thou foul abettor ! thou notorious bawd !  
 Thou plantest scandal, and displacest laud.  
 Thou ravisher, thou traitor, thou false thief,  
 Thy honey turns to gall, thy joy to grief !

‘ Thy secret pleasure turns to open shame ;  
 Thy private feasting to a public fast ;  
 Thy smoothing<sup>1</sup> titles to a ragged name :  
 Thy sugar'd tongue to bitter wormwood taste :  
 Thy violent vanities can never last.  
 How comes it then, vile Opportunity,  
 Being so bad, such numbers seek for thee ?

‘ When wilt thou be the humble suppliant's friend,  
 And bring him where his suit may be obtain'd ?  
 When wilt thou sort<sup>2</sup> an hour great strifes to  
 end,  
 Or free that soul which wretchedness hath chain'd ?  
 Give physic to the sick, ease to the pain'd ?

---

<sup>1</sup> Flattering.

<sup>2</sup> Choose.

The poor, lame, blind, halt, creep, cry out for  
thee ;  
But they ne'er meet with Opportunity.

The patient dies while the physician sleeps ;  
The orphan pines while the oppressor feeds ;  
Justice is feasting while the widow weeps ;  
Advice is sporting while infection breeds ;  
Thou grant'st no time for charitable deeds.

Wrath, envy, treason, rape, and murder's rages,  
The heinous hours wait on them as their pages.

When Truth and Virtue have to do with thee,  
A thousand crosses keep them from thy aid :  
They buy thy help : but Sin ne'er gives a fee,  
He gratis comes ; and thou art well appay'd,<sup>1</sup>  
As well to hear as grant what he hath said :  
My Collatine would else have come to me  
When Tarquin did, but he was stay'd by thee.

Guilty thou art of murder and of theft ;  
Guilty of perjury and subornation ;  
Guilty of treason, forgery, and shift ;  
Guilty of incest, that abomination :  
An accessory, by thine inclination,  
To all sins past, and all that are to come.  
From the creation to the general doom.

---

<sup>1</sup> Pleased, satisfied.

• Misshapen Time, copesmate<sup>1</sup> of ugly night,  
 Swift subtle post, carrier of grisly care ;  
 Eater of youth, false slave to false delight,  
 Base watch of woes, sin's packhorse, virtue's snare ,  
 Thou nursest all, and murdererst all that are.

O, hear me then, injurious, shifting Time !  
 Be guilty of my death, since of my crime.

• Why hath thy servant, Opportunity,  
 Betray'd the hours thou gavest me to repose ?  
 Cancell'd my fortunes, and enchain'd me  
 To endless date of never-ending woes ?  
 Time's office is to fine<sup>2</sup> the hate of foes ;  
 To eat up errors by opinion bred,  
 Not spend the dowry of a lawful bed.

• Time's glory is to calm contending kings ;  
 To unmask falsehood, and bring truth to light ;  
 To stamp the seal of time in aged things ;  
 To wake the morn, and sentinel the night ;  
 To wrong the wronger till he render right ;  
 To ruinate proud buildings with thy hours ;  
 And smear with dust their glittering, golden  
 towers ;

• To fill with worm-holes stately monuments ;  
 To feed oblivion with decay of things ;  
 To blot old books, and alter their contents ;

<sup>1</sup> Companion.

<sup>2</sup> Bring to an end.

To pluck the quills from ancient ravens' wings ;  
 To dry the old oak's sap, and cherish springs ;  
 To spoil antiquities of hammer'd steel ;  
 And turn the giddy round of Fortune's wheel ;

• To show the beldam daughters of her daughter ;  
 To make the child a man, the man a child ;  
 To slay the tiger that doth live by slaughter ;  
 To tame the unicorn and lion wild ;  
 To mock the subtle, in themselves beguiled ;  
 To cheer the ploughman with increaseful crops,  
 And waste huge stones with little water-drops.

• Why work'st thou mischief in thy pilgrimage,  
 Unless thou couldst return to make amends ?  
 One poor retiring<sup>1</sup> minute in an age  
 Would purchase thee a thousand thousand friends,  
 Lending him wit, that to bad debtors lends.  
 O, this dread night, wouldst thou one hour come  
 back,  
 I could prevent this storm, and shun thy wrack !

• Thou ceaseless lackey to eternity,  
 With some mischance cross Tarquin in his flight ;  
 Devise extremes beyond extremity,  
 To make him curse this cursed, crimeful night :  
 Let ghastly shadows his lewd eyes affright ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Returning.

And the dire thought of his committed evil,  
Shape every bush a hideous, shapeless devil.

‘ Disturb his hours of rest with restless trances ;  
Afflict him in his bed with bedrid groans ;  
Let there bechance him pitiful mischances,  
To make him moan, but pity not his moans :  
Stone him with harden’d hearts, harder than stones ;  
And let mild women to him lose their mildness,  
Wilder to him than tigers in their wildness.

‘ Let him have time to tear his curled hair ;  
Let him have time against himself to rave ;  
Let him have time of Time’s help to despair ;  
Let him have time to live a loathed slave ;  
Let him have time a beggar’s orts to crave ;  
And time to see one that by alms doth live,  
Disdain to him disdained scraps to give.

‘ Let him have time to see his friends his foes,  
And merry fools to mock at him resort ;  
Let him have time to mark how slow time goes  
In time of sorrow, and how swift and short  
His time of folly and his time of sport :  
And ever let his unrecalling<sup>1</sup> crime  
Have time to wail the abusing of his time.

‘ O Time, thou tutor both to good and bad,  
Teach me to curse him that thou taught’st this ill !

---

<sup>1</sup> For unrecallable.

At his own shadow let the thief run mad,  
Himself himself seek every hour to kill !  
Such wretched hands such wretched blood should  
spill :

For who so base would such an office have  
As slanderous death's-a-man to so base a slave ?

' The baser is he, coming from a king,  
To shame his hope with deeds degenerate.  
The mightier man, the mightier is the thing  
That makes him honor'd, or begets him hate ;  
For greatest scandal waits on greatest state.

' The moon being clouded, presently is miss'd ;  
But little stars may hide them when they list.

' The crow may bathe his coal-black wings in  
mire,

And unperceived fly with the filth away ;  
But if the like the snow-white swan desire,  
The stain upon his silver down will stay.

Poor grooms are sightless night, kings glorious  
day.

Gnats are unnoted wheresoe'er they fly,  
But eagles gazed upon with every eye.

' Out, idle words, servants to shallow fools !  
Unprofitable sounds, weak arbitrators !  
Busy yourselves in skill-contending schools :  
Debate where leisure serves with dull debaters ;  
To trembling clients be you mediators :

For me, I force<sup>1</sup> not argument a straw.  
Since that my case is past the help of law.

• In vain I rail at Opportunity,  
At Time, at Tarquin, and uncheerful night;  
In vain I cavil with my infamy;  
In vain I spurn at my confirm'd despite:  
This helpless smoke of words doth me no right.  
The remedy indeed to do me good,  
Is to let forth my foul, defiled blood.

• Poor hand, why quiver'st thou at this decree?  
Honor thyself to rid me of this shame:  
For if I die, my honor lives in thee;  
But if I live, thou livest in my defame:  
Since thou couldst not defend thy loyal dame,  
And wast afeard to scratch her wicked foe,  
Kill both thyself and her for yielding so.'

This said, from her betumbled couch she starteth,  
To find some desperate instrument of death:  
But this no slaughter-house no tool imparteth,  
To make more vent for passage of her breath,  
Which, thronging through her lips, so vanisheth  
As smoke from Ætna, that in air consumes,  
Or that which from discharged cannon fumes.

---

<sup>1</sup> Value.

‘ In vain,’ quoth she, ‘ I live, and seek in vain  
Some happy mean to end a hapless life.  
I fear’d by Tarquin’s falchion to be slain,  
Yet for the selfsame purpose seek a knife :  
But when I fear’d, I was a loyal wife ;  
So am I now.—O, no, that cannot be :  
Of that true type hath Tarquin rifled me.

‘ O, that is gone, for which I sought to live ;  
And therefore now I need not fear to die :  
To clear this spot by death, at least I give  
A badge of fame to slander’s livery ;  
A dying life to living infamy.  
Poor, helpless help, the treasure stolen away,  
To burn the guiltless casket where it lay !

‘ Well, well, dear Collatine, thou shalt not know  
The stained taste of violated troth ;  
I will not wrong thy true affection so,  
To flatter thee with an infringed oath :  
This bastard graff shall never come to growth :  
He shall not boast, who did thy stock pollute,  
That thou art doting father of his fruit :

‘ Nor shall he smile at thee in secret thought,  
Nor laugh with his companions at thy state ;  
But thou shalt know thy interest was not bought  
Basely with gold, but stolen from forth thy gate.  
For me, I am the mistress of my fate ;  
And with my trespass never will dispense,  
‘Till life to death acquit my forced offence.

' I will not poison thee with my attaint,  
 Nor fold my fault in cleanly-coin'd excuses ;  
 My sable ground of sin I will not paint,  
 To hide the truth of this false night's abuses :  
 My tongue shall utter all ; mine eyes, like sluices,  
 As from a mountain-spring that feeds a dale,  
 Shall gush pure streams to purge my impure tale.'

By this, lamenting Philomel had ended  
 The well-tuned warble of her nightly sorrow ;  
 And solemn night with slow-sad gait descended  
 To ugly hell ; when, lo, the blushing morrow  
 Lends light to all fair eyes that light will borrow :  
 But cloudy Lucrece shames herself to see,  
 And therefore still in night would cloister'd be.

Revealing day through every cranny spies,  
 And seems to point her out where she sits weeping ;  
 To whom she sobbing speaks :—' O eye of eyes,  
 Why pry'st thou through my window ? leave thy  
 peeping :  
 Mock with thy tickling beams eyes that are  
 sleeping :  
 Brand not my forehead with thy piercing light,  
 For day hath naught to do what 's done by night.'

Thus cavils she with every thing she sees.  
 True grief is fond<sup>1</sup> and testy as a child,

---

<sup>1</sup> Foolish.

Who, wayward once, his mood with naught agrees.  
Old woes, not infant sorrows, bear them mild :  
Continuance tames the one ; the other wild,  
Like an unpractised swimmer plunging still,  
With too much labor drowns for want of skill.

So she, deep-drenched in a sea of care,  
Holds disputation with each thing she views,  
And to herself all sorrow doth compare :  
No object but her passion's strength renewes ;  
And as one shifts, another straight ensues :  
Sometime her grief is dumb, and hath no words ;  
Sometime 'tis mad, and too much talk affords.

The little birds, that tune their morning's joy,  
Make her moans mad with their sweet melody :  
For mirth doth search the bottom of annoy ;  
Sad souls are slain in merry company ;  
Grief best is pleased with grief's society.  
True sorrow then is feelingly sufficed,  
When with like semblance it is sympathised.

'Tis double death to drown in ken of shore ;  
He ten times pines, that pines beholding food ;  
To see the salve doth make the wound ache more ;  
Great grief grieves most at that would do it  
good ;  
Deep woes roll forward like a gentle flood,  
Who, being stopp'd, the bounding banks o'er-  
flows :  
Grief dallied with nor law nor limit knows.

‘ You mocking birds,’ quoth she, ‘ your tunes entomb

Within your hollow-swelling, feather’d breasts,

And in my hearing be you mute and dumb !

(My restless discord loves no stops nor rests ;

A woful hostess brooks not merry guests)

Relish your nimble notes to pleasing<sup>1</sup> ears ;

Distress likes dumps,<sup>2</sup> when time is kept with tears.

‘ Come, Philomel, that sing’st of ravishment,

Make thy sad grove in my dishevell’d hair.

As the dank earth weeps at thy languishment,

So I at each sad strain will strain a tear,

And with deep groans the diapason bear :

For burthen-wise I ’ll hum on Tarquin still,

While thou on Tereus descant’st, better skill :<sup>3</sup>

‘ And whiles against a thorn thou bear’st thy part ;

To keep thy sharp woes waking, wretched I,

To imitate thee well, against my heart

Will fix a sharp knife, to affright mine eye ;

Who, if it wink, shall thereon fall and die.

These means, as frets upon an instrument,

Shall tune our heart-strings to true languish-  
ment :

<sup>1</sup> For pleased.

<sup>2</sup> A dump is a melancholy song.

<sup>3</sup> i. e. with better skill.

‘ And for, poor bird, thou sing’st not in the day,  
As shaming any eye should thee behold.  
Some dark, deep desert, seated from the way.  
That knows not parching heat nor freezing cold,  
We will find out; and there we will unfold  
To creatures stern sad tunes, to change their  
kinds:  
Since men prove beasts, let beasts bear gentle  
minds.’

As the poor frightened deer, that stands at gaze,  
Wildly determining which way to fly;  
Or one encompass’d with a winding maze,  
That cannot tread the way out readily;  
So with herself is she in mutiny,  
To live or die which of the twain were better,  
When life is shamed, and Death Reproach’s  
debtor.

‘ To kill myself,’ quoth she; ‘ alack! what were  
it,  
But with my body my poor soul’s pollution?  
They that lose half, with greater patience bear it.  
Than they whose whole is swallow’d in confusion.  
That mother tries a merciless conclusion,<sup>1</sup>  
Who, having two sweet babes, when death takes  
one,  
Will slay the other, and be nurse to none.

---

<sup>1</sup> Experiment.

• My body or my soul, which was the dearer?  
When the one pure, the other made divine:  
Whose love of either to myself was nearer?  
When both were kept for heaven and Collatine.  
Ah me! the bark peel'd from the lofty pine,  
His leaves will wither, and his sap decay;  
So must my soul, her bark being peel'd away.

• Her house is sack'd, her quiet interrupted;  
Her mansion batter'd by the enemy;  
Her sacred temple spotted, spoil'd, corrupted,  
Grossly engirt with daring infamy:  
Then let it not be call'd impiety,  
If in this blemish'd fort I make some hole,  
Through which I may convey this troubled  
soul.

• Yet die I will not, till my Collatine  
Have heard the cause of my untimely death;  
That he may vow, in that sad hour of mine,  
Revenge on him that made me stop my breath.  
My stained blood to Tarquin I'll bequeathe;  
Which, by him tainted, shall for him be spent;  
And, as his due, writ in my testament.

• My honor I'll bequeathe unto the knife  
That wounds my body so dishonored.  
'Tis honor to deprive dishonor'd life;  
The one will live, the other being dead:  
So of shame's ashes shall my fame be bred;

For in my death I murder shameful scorn :  
My shame so dead, mine honor is new-born.

• Dear lord of that dear jewel I have lost,  
What legacy shall I bequeathe to thee ?  
My resolution, love, shall be thy boast,  
By whose example thou revenged mayst be.  
How Tarquin must be used, read it in me :  
Myself, thy friend, will kill myself, thy foe ;  
And, for my sake, serve thou false Tarquin so.

• This brief abridgment of my will I make :—  
My soul and body to the skies and ground ;  
My resolution, husband, do thou take ;  
Mine honor be the knife's, that makes my wound ;  
My shame be his that did my fame confound ;  
And all my fame that lives, disbursed be  
To those that live, and think no shame of me.

• Thou, Collatine, shalt oversee this will :  
How was I overseen that thou shalt see it !  
My blood shall wash the slander of mine ill ;  
My life's foul deed, my life's fair end shall free it.  
Faint not, faint heart, but stoutly say, ' So be it.'  
Yield to my hand ; my hand shall conquer thee ;  
Thou dead, both die, and both shall victors be.'

This plot of death when sadly she had laid,  
And wiped the brinish pearl from her bright eyes,  
With untunèd tongue she hoarsely call'd her maid,

Whose swift obedience to her mistress hies ;  
For fleet-wing'd duty with thought's feathers flies.  
Poor Lucrece' cheeks unto her maid seem so  
As winter meads, when sun doth melt their  
snow.

Her mistress she doth give demure good-morrow  
With soft-slow tongue, true mark of modesty ;  
And sorts<sup>1</sup> a sad look to her lady's sorrow ;  
(For why ? her face wore sorrow's livery)  
But durst not ask of her audaciously  
Why her two suns were cloud-eclipsed so,  
Nor why her fair cheeks overwash'd with woe :

But as the earth doth weep, the sun being set,  
Each flower moisten'd like a melting eye ;  
Even so the maid with swelling drops 'gan wet  
Her circled eyne, enforced by sympathy  
Of those fair suns, set in her mistress' sky,  
Who in a salt-waved ocean quench their light,  
Which makes the maid weep like the dewy  
night.

A pretty while these pretty creatures stand,  
Like ivory conduits coral cisterns filling :  
One justly weeps ; the other takes in hand  
No cause, but company, of her drops spilling,  
Their gentle sex to weep are often willing ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Chooses.

Grieving themselves to guess at others' smarts :  
 And then they drown their eyes, or break their  
 hearts :

For men have marble, women waxen minds,  
 And therefore are they form'd as marble will ;  
 The weak oppress'd, the impression of strange kinds  
 Is form'd in them by force, by fraud, or skill :  
 Then call them not the authors of their ill,  
 No more than wax shall be accounted evil,  
 Wherein is stamp'd the semblance of a devil.

Their smoothness, like a goodly champaign plain,  
 Lays open all the little worms that creep :  
 In men, as in a rough-grown grove, remain  
 Cave-keeping evils that obscurely sleep.  
 Through crystal walls each little mote will peep :  
 Though men can cover crimes with bold, stern  
 looks,  
 Poor women's faces are their own faults' books.

No man inveigh against the wither'd flower,  
 But chide rough winter that the flower hath kill'd !  
 Not that devour'd, but that which doth devour,  
 Is worthy blame. O, let it not be hild<sup>1</sup> !  
 Poor women's faults, that they are so fulfill'd  
 With men's abuses : those proud lords, to blame,  
 Make weak-made women tenants to their shame.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. held ; so spelt for the sake of the rhyme.

The precedent whereof in Lucrece view,  
Assail'd by night with circumstances strong  
Of present death, and shame that might ensue  
By that her death, to do her husband wrong:  
Such danger to resistance did belong,

That dying fear through all her body spread;  
And who cannot abuse a body dead?

By this, mild patience bid fair Lucrece speak  
To the poor counterfeit of her complaining:  
‘ My girl,’ quoth she, ‘ on what occasion break  
Those tears from thee, that down thy cheeks are  
raining?’

If thou dost weep for grief of my sustaining,  
Know, gentle wench, it small avails my mood:  
If tears could help, mine own would do me  
good.

‘ But tell me, girl, when went’—(and there she  
stay’d

Till after a deep groan) ‘ Tarquin from hence?’

‘ Madam, ere I was up,’ replied the maid;

‘ The more to blame my sluggard negligence:

Yet with the fault I thus far can dispense:—

Myself was stirring ere the break of day;

And, ere I rose, was Tarquin gone away.

‘ But, lady, if your maid may be so bold,

She would request to know your heaviness.’

‘ O, peace!’ quoth Lucrece: ‘ if it should be told.

The repetition cannot make it less ;  
For more it is than I can well express :  
    And that deep torture may be call'd a hell,  
    When more is felt than one hath power to tell.

' Go, get me hither paper, ink, and pen :—  
Yet save that labor, for I have them here.  
What should I say ?—One of my husband's men  
Bid thou be ready, by and by, to bear  
A letter to my lord, my love, my dear :  
    Bid him with speed prepare to carry it :  
    The cause craves haste, and it will soon be  
        writ.'

Her maid is gone, and she prepares to write,  
First hovering o'er the paper with her quill :  
Conceit and grief an eager combat fight ;  
What wit sets down, is blotted straight with will ;  
This is too curious-good, this blunt and ill :  
    Much like a press of people at a door,  
    Throng her inventions, which shall go before.

At last she thus begins :—' Thou worthy lord  
Of that unworthy wife that greeteth thee,  
Health to thy person ! next vouchsafe to afford  
(If ever, love, thy Lucrece thou wilt see)  
Some present speed to come and visit me :  
    So I commend me from our house in grief :  
    My woes are tedious, though my words are  
        brief.'

Here folds she up the tenor of her woe,  
Her certain sorrow writ uncertainly.  
By this short schedule Collatine may know  
Her grief, but not her grief's true quality :  
She dares not thereof make discovery ;  
Lest he should hold it her own gross abuse,  
Ere she with blood had stain'd her stain'd ex-  
cuse.

Besides, the life and feeling of her passion  
She hoards, to spend when he is by to hear her ;  
When sighs, and groans, and tears may grace the  
fashion  
Of her disgrace, the better so to clear her  
From that suspicion which the world might bear  
her.

To shun this blot, she would not blot the letter  
With words, till action might become them  
better.

To see sad sights moves more than hear them  
told ;  
For then the eye interprets to the ear  
The heavy motion that it doth behold.  
When every part a part of woe doth bear,  
'Tis but a part of sorrow that we hear :  
Deep sounds make lesser noise than shallow  
fords ;  
And sorrow ebbs, being blown with wind of  
words.

Her letter now is seal'd, and on it writ.—  
 'At Ardea, to my lord, with more than haste :—  
 The post attends, and she delivers it,  
 Charging the sour-faced groom to hie as fast  
 As lagging fowls before the northern blast..  
 Speed more than speed but dull and slow she  
 deems :  
 Extremity still urgeth such extremes.

The homely villein<sup>1</sup> courtesies to her low ;  
 And blushing on her, with a steadfast eye  
 Receives the scroll, without or yea or no,  
 And forth with bashful innocence doth hie.  
 But they, whose guilt within their bosoms lie,  
 Imagine every eye beholds their blame ;  
 For Lucrece thought he blush'd to see her shame ;

When, silly groom ! God wot, it was defect  
 Of spirit, life, and bold audacity.  
 Such harmless creatures have a true respect  
 To talk in deeds, while others saucily  
 Promise more speed, but do it leisurely :  
 Even so, this pattern of the worn-out age  
 Pawn'd honest looks, but laid no words to gage.

His kindled duty kindled her mistrust,  
 That two red fires in both their faces blazed ;  
 She thought he blush'd, as knowing Tarquin's lust.

---

<sup>1</sup> Slave.

And, blushing with him, wistly<sup>1</sup> on him gazed;  
 Her earnest eye did make him more amazed:  
 The more she saw the blood his cheeks replenish,  
 The more she thought he spied in her some  
 blemish.

But long she thinks till he return again,  
 And yet the dutous vassal scarce is gone.  
 The weary time she cannot entertain,  
 For now 'tis stale to sigh, to weep, and groan.  
 So woe hath wearied woe, moan tired moan,  
 That she her plaints a little while doth stay,  
 Pausing for means to mourn some newer way.

At last, she calls to mind where hangs a piece  
 Of skilful painting, made for Priam's Troy;  
 Before the which is drawn the power of Greece,  
 For Helen's rape the city to destroy,  
 Threatening cloud-kissing Ilion with annoy;  
 Which the conceited<sup>2</sup> painter drew so proud,  
 As heaven, it seem'd, to kiss the turrets bow'd.

A thousand lamentable objects there,  
 In scorn of Nature, Art gave lifeless life:  
 Many a dry drop seem'd a weeping tear,  
 Shed for the slaughter'd husband by the wife:  
 The red blood reek'd to show the painter's strife;

---

<sup>1</sup> Attentively.

<sup>2</sup> Fanciful, ingenious.

And dying eyes gleam'd forth their ashy lights,  
Like dying coals burnt out in tedious nights.

There might you see the laboring pioneer  
Begrimed with sweat, and smeared all with dust  
And from the towers of Troy there would appear  
The very eyes of men through loopholes thrust,  
Gazing upon the Greeks with little lust.

Such sweet observance in this work was had,  
That one might see those far-off eyes look sad.

In great commanders grace and majesty  
You might behold, triumphing in their faces ;  
In youth, quick bearing and dexterity ;  
And here and there the painter interlaces  
Pale cowards, marching on with trembling paces ;  
Which heartless peasants did so well resemble,  
That one would swear he saw them quake and  
tremble.

In Ajax and Ulysses, O, what art  
Of physiognomy might one behold !  
The face of either 'cipher'd either's heart ;  
Their face their manners most expressly told :  
In Ajax' eyes blunt rage and rigor roll'd ;  
But the mild glance that sly Ulysses lent,  
Show'd deep regard and smiling government.

There pleading might you see grave Nestor stand,  
As 'twere encouraging the Greeks to fight ;  
Making such sober action with his hand.

That it beguiled attention, charm'd the sight.  
In speech, it seem'd, his beard, all silver white,  
Wagg'd up and down; and from his lips did fly  
Thin winding breath, which purl'd up to the sky.

About him were a press of gaping faces,  
Which seem'd to swallow up his sound advice;  
All jointly listening, but with several graces,  
As if some mermaid did their ears entice;  
Some high, some low, the painter was so nice:  
The scalps of many, almost hid behind,  
To jump up higher seem'd, to mock the mind.

Here one man's hand lean'd on another's head,  
His nose being shadow'd by his neighbor's ear;  
Here one, being throng'd, bears back, all bollen<sup>1</sup>  
and red;  
Another, smother'd, seems to pelt<sup>2</sup> and swear:  
And in their rage such signs of rage they bear,  
As, but for loss of Nestor's golden words,  
It seem'd they would debate with angry swords.

For much imaginary work was there;  
Conceit deceitful, so compact, so kind,<sup>3</sup>  
That for Achilles' image stood his spear,  
Griped in an armed hand; himself, behind,  
Was left unseen, save to the eye of mind:

---

<sup>1</sup> Swollen.

<sup>2</sup> Natural.

<sup>3</sup> i. e. be in a clamorous passion.

A hand, a foot, a face, a leg, a head,  
Stood for the whole to be imagined :

And from the walls of strong-besieged Troy,  
When their brave hope, bold Hector, march'd to  
field,

Stood many Trojan mothers, sharing joy  
To see their youthful sons bright weapons wield.  
And to their hope they such odd action yield,  
That, through their light joy, seemed to appear  
Like bright things stain'd, a kind of heavy fear :

And, from the strand of Dardan, where they fought,  
To Simois' reedy banks the red blood ran,  
Whose waves to imitate the battle sought  
With swelling ridges; and their ranks began  
To break upon the galled shore, and than<sup>1</sup>  
Retire again, till, meeting greater ranks,  
They join, and shoot their foam at Simois' banks.

To this well-painted piece is Lucrece come,  
To find a face where all distress is staled :<sup>2</sup>  
Many she sees, where cares have carved some;  
But none, where all distress and dolor dwell'd,  
Till she despairing Hecuba beheld,  
Staring on Priam's wounds with her old eyes,  
Which bleeding under Pyrrhus' proud foot lies.

---

<sup>1</sup> A form of 'then,' frequently used by old poets for the sake of the rhyme.

<sup>2</sup> Written, depicted.

In her the painter had anatomised  
Time's ruin, beauty's wreck, and grim care's reign :  
Her cheeks with chaps and wrinkles were disguised ;  
Of what she was no semblance did remain :  
Her blue blood, changed to black in every vein,  
Wanting the spring that those shrunk pipes had  
fed,  
Show'd life imprison'd in a body dead.

On this sad shadow Lucrece spends her eyes,  
And shapes her sorrow to the beldam's woes,  
Who nothing wants to answer her but cries,  
And bitter words to ban her cruel foes :  
The painter was no god to lend her those ;  
- And therefore Lucrece swears he did her wrong,  
To give her so much grief, and not a tongue.

• Poor instrument,' quoth she, ' without a sound,  
I 'll tune thy woes with my lamenting tongue ;  
And drop sweet balm in Priam's painted wound ;  
And rail on Pyrrhus that hath done him wrong ;  
And with my tears quench Troy, that burns so  
long ;  
And with my knife scratch out the angry eyes  
Of all the Greeks that are thine enemies.

• Show me the strumpet that began this stir.  
That with my nails her beauty I may tear :  
Thy heat of lust, fond Paris, did incur  
This load of wrath that burning Troy doth bear ;  
Thy eye kindled the fire that burneth here :

And here in Troy, for trespass of thine eye,  
The sire, the son, the dame, and daughter die.

‘ Why should the private pleasure of some one  
Become the public plague of many more ? <sup>1</sup>  
Let sin, alone committed, light alone  
Upon his head that hath transgressed so.  
Let guiltless souls be freed from guilty woe.  
For one’s offence why should so many fall,  
To plague a private sin in general ?

‘ Lo, here weeps Hecuba, here Priam dies,  
Here manly Hector faints, here Troilus swounds ;  
Here friend by friend in bloody channel lies,  
And friend to friend gives unadvised <sup>2</sup> wounds,  
And one man’s lust these many lives confounds.  
Had doting Priam check’d his son’s desire,  
Troy had been bright with fame, and not with  
fire.’

Here feelingly she weeps Troy’s painted woes :  
For sorrow, like a heavy-hanging bell,  
Once set on ringing, with his own weight goes ;  
Then little strength rings out the doleful knell :  
So Lucrece, set a-work, sad tales doth tell  
To pencil’d pensiveness and color’d sorrow.  
She lends them words, and she their looks doth  
borrow.

---

<sup>1</sup> More.

<sup>2</sup> Unintentional.

She throws her eyes about the painting, round,  
 And whom she finds forlorn, she doth lament:  
 At last, she sees a wretched image bound,  
 That piteous looks to Phrygian shepherds lent:  
 His face, though full of cares, yet show'd content:  
 Onward to Troy with the blunt swains he goes,  
 So mild, that Patience seem'd to scorn his woes.

In him the painter labor'd with his skill  
 To hide deceit, and give the harmless show  
 An humble gait, calm looks, eyes wailing still,  
 A brow unbent, that seem'd to welcome woe;  
 Cheeks, neither red nor pale, but mingled so,  
 That blushing red no guilty instance<sup>1</sup> gave,  
 Nor ashy pale the fear that false hearts have :

But, like a constant and confirmed devil,  
 He entertain'd a show so seeming just,  
 And therein so ensconced<sup>2</sup> his secret evil,  
 That jealousy itself could not mistrust,  
 False-creeping craft and perjury should thrust  
 Into so bright a day such black-faced storms,  
 Or blot with hell-born sin such saintlike forms.

The well-skill'd workman this mild image drew  
 For perjured Sinon, whose enchanting story  
 The credulous old Priam after slew;

---

<sup>1</sup> Symptom.

<sup>2</sup> Concealed.

Whose words, like wildfire, burnt the shining  
glory  
Of rich-built Ilion, that the skies were sorry.  
And little stars shot from their fixed places,  
When their glass fell, wherein they view'd their  
faces.

This picture she advisedly<sup>1</sup> perused,  
And chid the painter for his wondrous skill ;  
Saying, some shape in Sinon's was abused,  
So fair a form lodged not a mind so ill :  
And still on him she gazed ; and, gazing still,  
Such signs of truth in his plain face she spied,  
That she concludes the picture was belied.

' It cannot be,' quoth she, ' that so much guile '—  
(She would have said) ' can lurk in such a look : '  
But Tarquin's shape came in her mind the while,  
And from her tongue, ' can lurk ' from ' cannot '  
took :

' It cannot be ' she in that sense forsook,  
And turn'd it thus :—' It cannot be, I find,  
But such a face should bear a wicked mind :

' For even as subtle Sinon here is painted,  
So sober-sad, so weary, and so mild,  
As if with grief or travail he had fainted,  
To me came Tarquin armed ; so beguiled<sup>2</sup>  
With outward honesty, but yet defiled

<sup>1</sup> Attentively.

<sup>2</sup> I. e. guilefully coaxed.

With inward vice : as Priam him did cherish,  
So did I Tarquin ; so my Troy did perish.

‘ Look, look, how listening Priam wets his eyes,  
To see those borrow’d tears that Sinon sheds.  
Priam, why art thou old, and yet not wise ?  
For every tear he falls a Trojan bleeds :  
His eye drops fire ; no water thence proceeds :  
Those round, clear pearls of his, that move thy  
pity,  
Are balls of quenchless fire to burn thy city.

‘ Such devils steal effects from lightless hell ;  
For Sinon in his fire doth quake with cold ;  
And in that cold, hot-burning fire doth dwell ;  
These contraries such unity do hold,  
Only to flatter fools, and make them bold ;  
So Priam’s trust false Sinon’s tears doth flatter,  
That he finds means to burn his Troy with  
water.’

Here, all enraged, such passion her assails,  
That ~~patience~~ is quite beaten from her breast :  
She tears the senseless Sinon with her nails,  
Comparing him to that unhappy guest,  
Whose deed hath made herself herself detest :  
At last, she smilingly with this gives o’er :—  
‘ Fool ! fool ! ’ quoth she ; ‘ his wounds will not  
be sore.’

Thus ebbs and flows the current of her sorrow,  
And time doth weary time with her complaining :  
She looks for night, and then she longs for morrow ;  
And both she thinks too long with her remaining :  
Short time seems long in sorrow's sharp sustaining.

Though woe be heavy, yet it seldom sleeps ;  
And they that watch, see time how slow it  
creeps ;

Which all this time hath overslipp'd her thought,  
That she with painted images hath spent ;  
Being from the feeling of her own grief brought  
By deep surmise of others' detriment ;  
Losing her woes in shows of discontent.

It easeth some, though none it ever cured,  
To think their dolor others have endured.

But now the mindful messenger, come back,  
Brings home his lord and other company ;  
Who finds his Lucrece clad in mourning black ;  
And round about her tear-distained eye  
Blue circles stream'd, like rainbows in the sky.

These water-galls<sup>1</sup> in her dim element  
Foretell new storms to those already spent :

Which when her sad-beholding husband saw,  
Amazedly in her sad face he stares :

---

<sup>1</sup> Watery appearances in the sky, attendant on rainbows.

Her eyes, though sod in tears, look'd red and raw :  
Her lively color kill'd with deadly cares.  
He hath no power to ask her how she fares :  
But stood, like old acquaintance in a trance,  
Met far from home, wondering each other's  
chance.

At last, he takes her by the bloodless hand,  
And thus begins :—‘ What uncouth, ill event  
Hath thee befallen, that thou dost trembling stand ?  
Sweet love, what spite hath thy fair color spent ?  
Why art thou thus attired in discontent ?  
Unmask, dear dear, this moody heaviness ;  
And tell thy grief, that we may give redress.’

Three times with sighs she gives her sorrow  
fire,  
Ere once she can discharge one word of woe :  
At length, address'd<sup>1</sup> to answer his desire,  
She modestly prepares to let them know  
Her honor is ta'en prisoner by the foe ;  
While Collatine and his consorted lords,  
With sad attention long to hear her words.

And now this pale swan in her watery nest  
Begins the sad dirge of her certain ending :  
‘ Few words,’ quoth she, ‘ shall fit the trespass  
best,

---

<sup>1</sup> Ready, prepared.

Where no excuse can give the fault amending :  
In me more woes than words are now depending ;  
And my laments would be drawn out too long,  
To tell them all with one poor tired tongue.

‘ Then be this all the task it hath to say :—  
Dear husband, in the interest of thy bed  
A stranger came, and on that pillow lay,  
Where thou wast wont to rest thy weary head ;  
And what wrong else may be imagined

By foul enforcement might be done to me,  
From that, alas ! thy Lucrece is not free :

‘ For in the dreadful dead of dark midnight,  
With shining falchion in my chamber came  
A creeping creature, with a flaming light,  
And softly cried,—‘ Awake, thou Roman dame,  
And entertain my love ; else lasting shame

On thee and thine this night I will inflict,  
If thou my love’s desire do contradict.

‘ ‘ For some hard-favor’d groom of thine,’ quoth he,  
‘ Unless thou yoke thy liking to my will,  
I ’ll murder straight, and then I ’ll slaughter thee,  
And swear I found you where you did fulfil  
The loathsome act of lust, and so did kill  
The lechers in their deed : this act will be  
My fame, and thy perpetual infamy.’

‘ With this I did begin to start and cry,  
And then against my heart he set his sword.

Swearing, unless I took all patiently,  
I should not live to speak another word :  
So should my shame still rest upon record :  
And never be forgot in mighty Rome  
The adulterate death of Lucrece and her groom.

‘ Mine enemy was strong, my poor self weak,  
And far the weaker with so strong a fear :  
My bloody judge forbad my tongue to speak ;  
No rightful plea might plead for justice there :  
His scarlet lust came evidence to swear  
That my poor beauty had purloin’d his eyes ,  
And when the judge is robb’d, the prisoner dies.

‘ O, teach me how to make mine own excuse !  
Or, at the least, this refuge let me find ;  
Though my gross blood be stain’d with this abuse,  
Immaculate and spotless is my mind :  
That was not forced ; that never was inclined  
To accessory yieldings ; but still pure  
Doth in her poison’d closet yet endure.’

Lo, here, the hopeless merchant of this loss,  
With head declined, and voice damm’d up with  
woe,  
With sad-set eyes, and wretched arms across,  
From lips new-waxen pale begins to blow  
The grief away, that stops his answer so :  
But, wretched as he is, he strives in vain :  
What he breathes out, his breath drinks up.  
again.

As through an arch the violent, roaring tide  
 Outruns the eye that doth behold his haste.  
 Yet in the eddy boundeth in his pride  
 Back to the strait that forced him on so fast;  
 In rage sent out, recall'd in rage, being past:  
 Even so his sighs, his sorrows, make a saw,  
 To push grief on, and back the same grief draw:

Which speechless woe of his poor she attendeth,  
 And his untimely frenzy thus awaketh:—  
 ‘ Dear lord, thy sorrow to my sorrow lendeth  
 Another power: no flood by raining slaketh.  
 My woe too sensible thy passion maketh  
 More feeling-painful: let it then suffice  
 To drown one woe, one pair of weeping eyes:

‘ And for my sake, when I might charm thee so,  
 For she that was thy Lucrece,—now attend me:  
 Be suddenly revenged on my foe,  
 Thine, mine, his own; suppose thou dost defend  
 me  
 From what is past: the help that thou shalt lend  
 me  
 Comes all too late; yet let the traitor die:  
 For sparing justice feeds iniquity.

‘ But ere I name him, you, fair lords,’ quoth she.  
 Speaking to those that came with Collatine,  
 ‘ Shall plight your honorable faiths to me,  
 With swift pursuit to venge this wrong of mine;  
 For ‘tis a meritorious, fair design,

To chase injustice with revengeful arms :  
Knights, by their oaths, should right poor ladies' harms.'

At this request, with noble disposition  
Each present lord began to promise aid,  
As bound in knighthood to her imposition,  
Longing to hear the hateful foe bewray'd :  
But she, that yet her sad task hath not said,  
The protestation stops. 'O, speak,' quoth she ;  
' How may this forced stain be wiped from  
me ?

' What is the quality of mine offence,  
Being constrain'd with dreadful circumstance ?  
May my pure mind with the foul act dispense,  
My low-declined honor to advance ?  
May any terms acquit me from this chance ?  
The poison'd fountain clears itself again ;  
And why not I from this compelled stain ?'

With this, they all at once began to say,  
Her body's stain her mind untainted clears ;  
While with a joyless smile she turns away  
The face, that map, which deep impression bears  
Of hard misfortune, carved in it with tears.

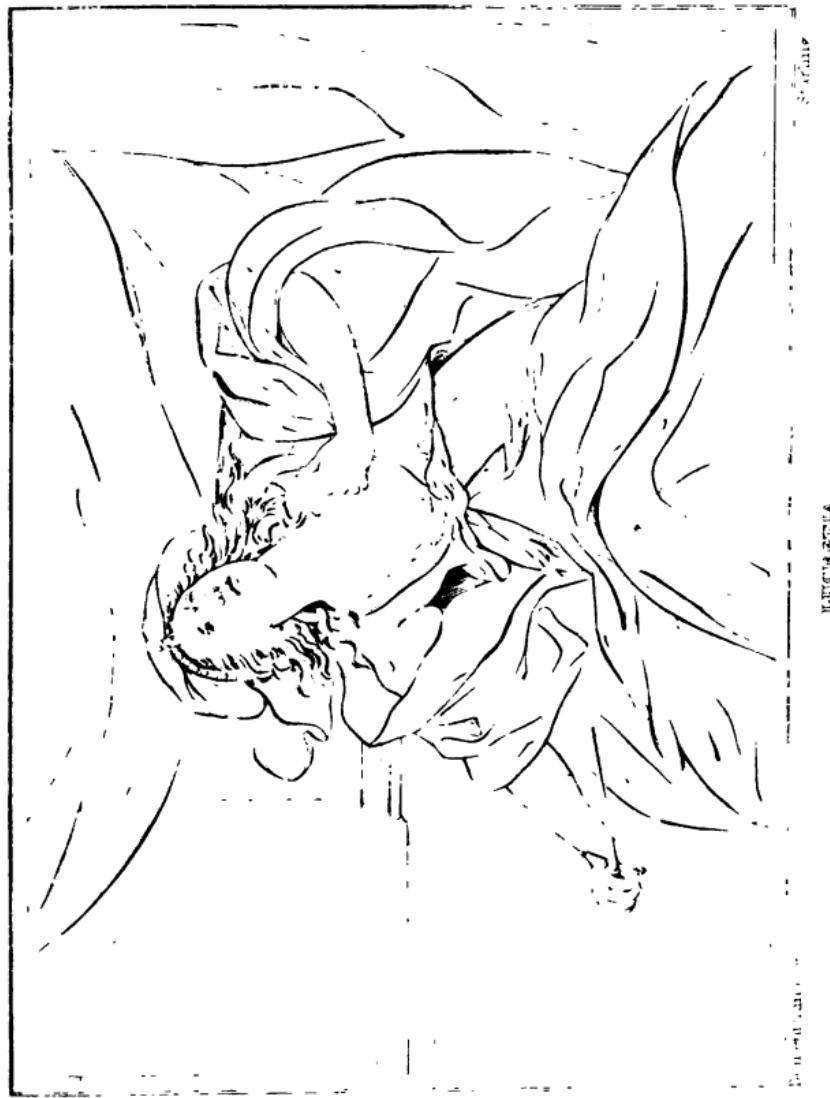
' No, no,' quoth she ; ' no dame, hereafter living,  
By my excuse shall claim excuse's giving.'

Here, with a sigh, as if her heart would break.  
She throws forth Tarquin's name: 'He, he,' she  
says;  
But more than 'he,' her poor tongue could not  
speak;  
Till, after many accents and delays,  
Untimely breathings, sick and short assays.  
She utters this:—'He, he, fair lords, 'tis he,  
That guides this hand to give this wound to  
me.'

Even here she sheathed in her harmless breast  
A harmful knife, that thence her soul unsheathed:  
That blow did bail it from the deep unrest  
Of that polluted prison where it breathed:  
Her contrite sighs unto the clouds bequeathed  
Her winged sprite; and through her wounds  
doth fly  
Life's lasting date from cancell'd destiny.

Stone-still, astonish'd with this deadly deed,  
Stood Collatine and all his lordly crew;  
Till Lucrece' father, that beholds her bleed,  
Himself on her self-slaughter'd body threw;  
And from the purple fountain Brutus drew  
The murderous knife; and as it left the place,  
Her blood, in poor revenge, held it in chase;

And bubbling from her breast, it doth divide  
In two slow rivers, that the crimson blood  
Circles her body in on every side,





Who like a late-sack'd island vastly<sup>1</sup> stood.  
Bare and unpeopled, in this fearful flood.

Some of her blood still pure and red remain'd ;  
And some look'd black, and that false Tarquin  
stain'd.

About the mourning and congealed face  
Of that black blood, a watery rigol<sup>2</sup> goes,  
Which seems to weep upon the tainted place :  
And ever since, as pitying Lucrece' woes,  
Corrupted blood some watery token shows ;  
And blood untainted still doth red abide,  
Blushing at that which is so putrefied.

' Daughter, dear daughter,' old Lucretius cries,  
' That life was mine, which thou hast here deprived.  
If in the child the father's image lies,  
Where shall I live, now Lucrece is unlived ?  
Thou wast not to this end from me derived.  
If children predecease progenitors,  
We are their offspring, and they none of ours.

' Poor broken glass, I often did behold  
In thy sweet semblance my old age new-born ;  
But now that fair, fresh mirror, dim and old,  
Shows me a bareboned death by time outworn ;  
O, from thy cheeks my image thou hast torn,  
And shiver'd all the beauty of my glass,  
That I no more can see what once I was.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. like a waste.

<sup>2</sup> Circle.

' O time, cease thou thy course, and last no longer,  
If they surcease to be, that should survive.  
Shall rotten death make conquest of the stronger,  
And leave the faltering, feeble souls alive?  
The old bees die, the young possess their hive :  
Then live, sweet Lucrece, live again, and see  
Thy father die, and not thy father thee ! '

By this starts Collatine as from a dream,  
And bids Lucretius give his sorrow place ;  
And then in key-cold Lucrece' bleeding stream  
He falls, and bathes the pale fear in his face,  
And counterfeits to die with her a space ;  
Till manly shame bids him possess his breath,  
And live, to be revenged on her death.

The deep vexation of his inward soul  
Hath served a dumb arrest upon his tongue ;  
Who, mad that sorrow should his use control,  
Or keep him from heart-easing words so long,  
Begins to talk ; but through his lips do throng  
Weak words, so thick come, in his poor heart's  
aid,  
That no man could distinguish what he said :

Yet sometime Tarquin was pronounced plain,  
But through his teeth, as if the name he tore.  
This windy tempest, till it blow up rain,  
Held back his sorrow's tide, to make it more :  
At last it rains, and busy winds give o'er.

Then son and father weep with equal strife.  
Who should weep most for daughter or for wife.

The one doth call her his, the other his,  
Yet neither may possess the claim they lay.  
The father says, 'She 's mine.'—'O, mine she is,'  
Replies her husband : 'do not take away  
My sorrow's interest ; let no mourner say  
He weeps for her ; for she was only mine,  
And only must be wail'd by Collatine.'

'O,' quoth Lucretius, 'I did give that life,  
Which she too early and too late<sup>1</sup> hath spill'd.'  
'Woe, woe !' quoth Collatine ; 'she was my wife ;  
I owed her, and 'tis mine that she hath kill'd.'  
'My daughter !' and 'My wife !' with clamors  
fill'd  
The dispersed air, who, holding Lucrece' life,  
Answer'd their cries, 'My daughter !' and 'My  
wife !'

Brutus, who pluck'd the knife from Lucrece' side,  
Seeing such emulation in their woe,  
Began to clothe his wit in state and pride,  
Burying in Lucrece' wound his folly's show.  
He with the Romans was esteemed so  
As silly-jeering idiots are with kings,  
For sportive words, and uttering foolish things :

---

<sup>1</sup> Too recently.

But now he throws that shallow habit by,  
 Wherein deep policy did him disguise ;  
 And arm'd his long-hid wits advisedly,  
 To check the tears in Collatinus' eyes.

‘ Thou wronged lord of Rome,’ quoth he, ‘ arise :  
 Let my unsounded self, supposed a fool,  
 Now set thy long-experienced wit to school.

‘ Why, Collatine, is woe the cure for woe ?  
 Do wounds help wounds, or grief help grievous  
 deeds ?

Is it revenge to give thyself a blow,  
 For his foul act by whom thy fair wife bleeds ?  
 Such childish humor from weak minds proceeds :

Thy wretched wife mistook the matter so,  
 To slay herself, that should have slain her  
 foe.

‘ Courageous Roman, do not steep thy heart  
 In such relenting dew of lamentations ;  
 But kneel with me, and help to bear thy part,  
 To rouse our Roman gods with invocations ;  
 That they will suffer these abominations,

(Since Rome herself in them doth stand dis-  
 graced)

By our strong arms from forth her fair streets  
 chased.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The construction is,—‘ that they will suffer these abomi-  
 nations to be chased,’ &c.

‘ Now, by the Capitol that we adore ;  
And by this chaste blood so unjustly stain’d ;  
By heaven’s fair sun, that breeds the fat earth’s  
store ;  
By all our country rights in Rome maintain’d ;  
And by chaste Lucrece’ soul, that late complain’d  
Her wrongs to us, and by this bloody knife ;—  
We will revenge the death of this true wife.’

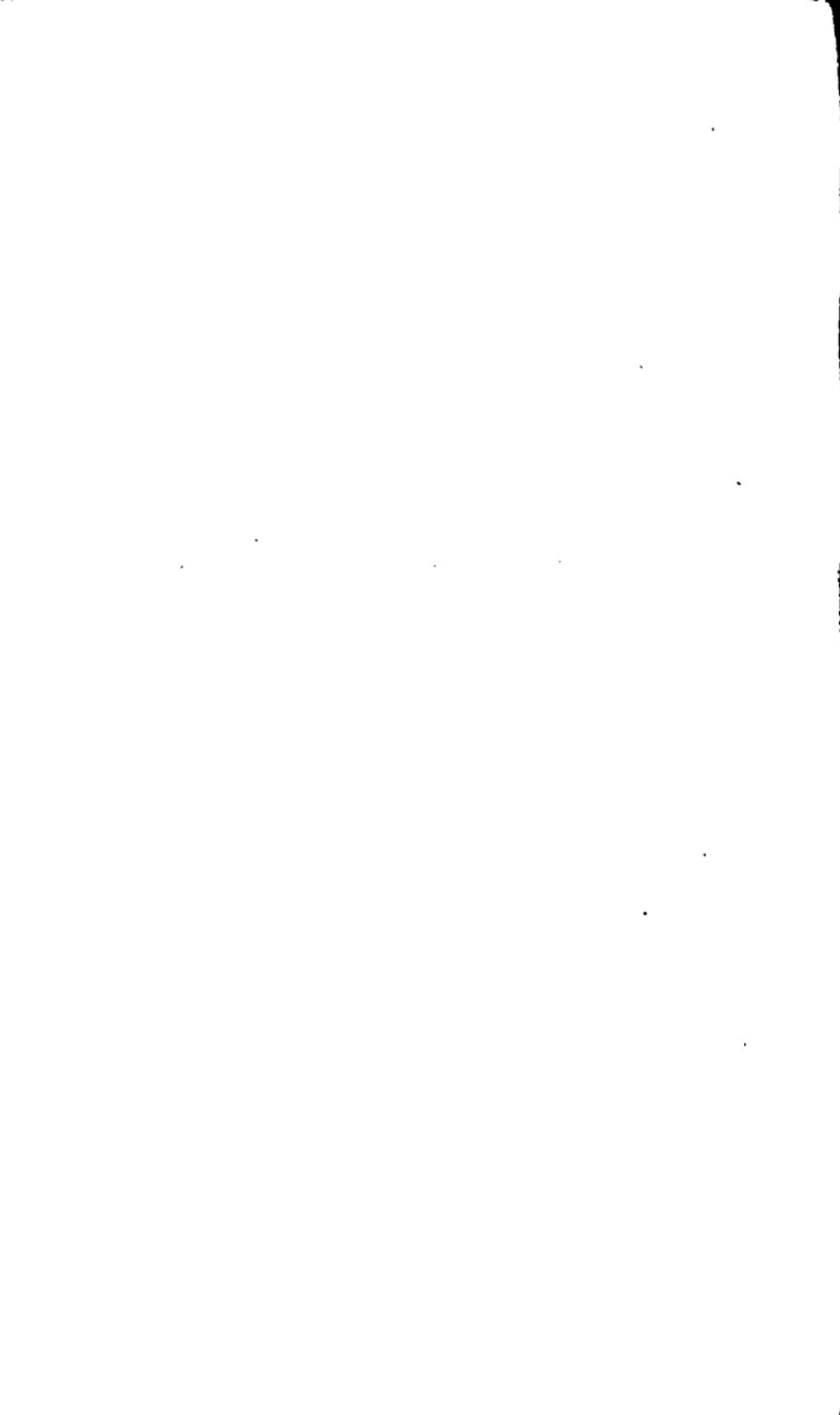
This said, he struck his hand upon his breast,  
And kiss’d the fatal knife to end his vow ;  
And to his protestation urged the rest,  
Who, wondering at him, did his words allow :<sup>1</sup>  
Then jointly to the ground their knees they bow ;  
And that deep vow which Brutus made before,  
He doth again repeat, and that they swore.

When they had sworn to this advised doom,  
They did conclude to bear dead Lucrece thence ;  
To show her bleeding body thorough Rome,  
And so to publish Tarquin’s foul offence :  
Which being done with speedy diligence,  
The Romans plausibly<sup>2</sup> did give consent  
To Tarquin’s everlasting banishment.

---

<sup>1</sup> Approve.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. with acclamation.

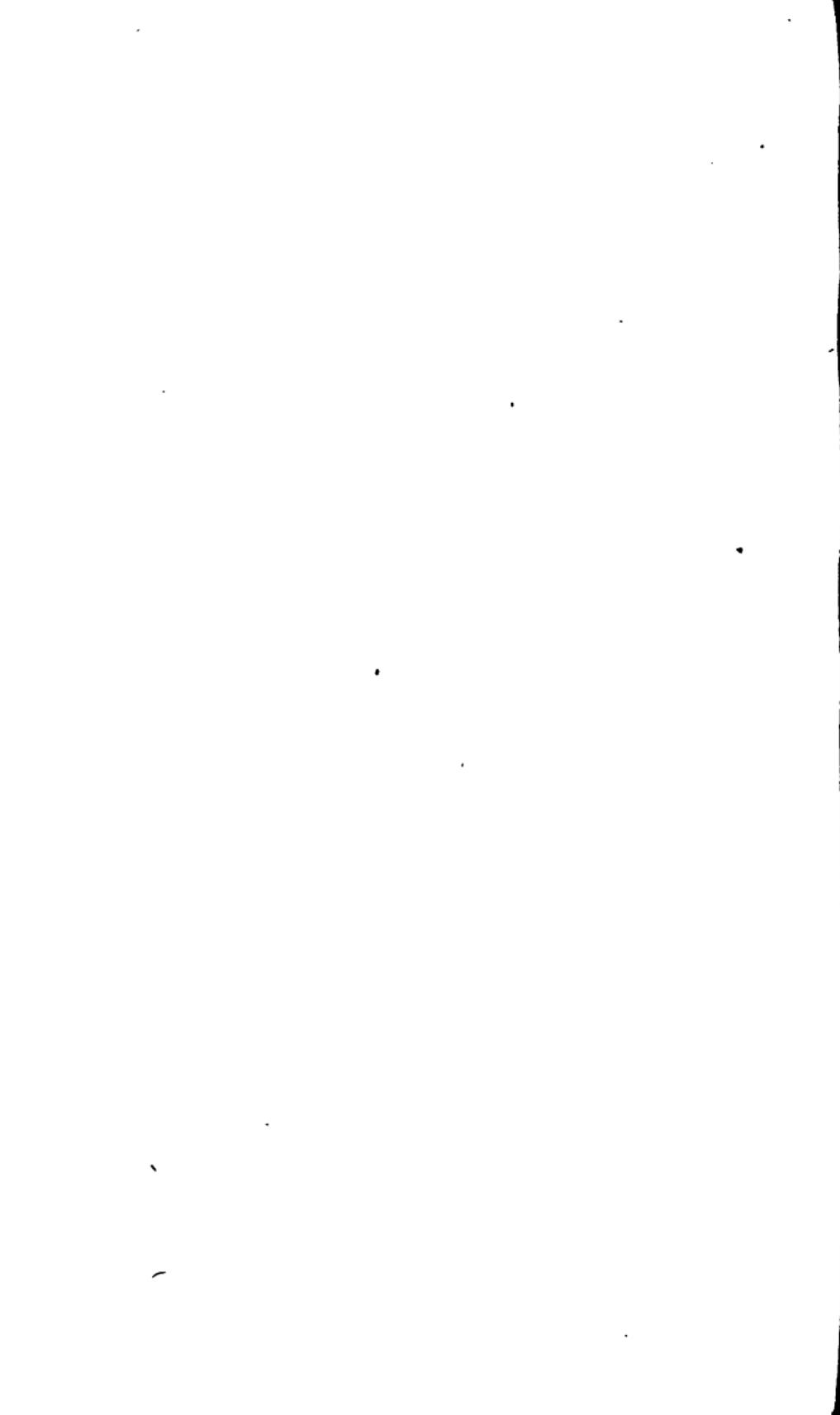


S O N N E T S.

SHAK.

**xv.**

**x**



## S O N N E T S.

---

[Shakspeare's Sonnets were entered on the books of the Stationers' Company, May 20th, 1609, by Thomas Thorpe, who prefixed the following dedication:—‘To the only begetter of these ensuing Sonnets, Mr. W. H., all happiness, and that eternity promised by our ever-living poet, wisheth the well-wishing adventurer in setting forth, T. T.’ In the course of the same year these Sonnets were printed in quarto: they were, however, written long before this period, since they are mentioned as a work of great popularity by Meres, in his *Wit's Treasury*, which was published in 1598. Malone remarks, that ‘the general style of these poems, and the numerous passages in them which remind us of our author's plays, leave not the smallest doubt of their authenticity.’]

---

### I.

FROM fairest creatures we desire increase,  
That thereby beauty's rose might never die,  
But as the riper should by time decease,  
His tender heir might bear his memory:  
But thou, contracted to thine own bright eyes,  
Feed'st thy light's flame with self-substantial fuel,  
Making a famine where abundance lies,  
Thyself thy foe, to thy sweet self too cruel,

Thou that art now the world's fresh ornament,  
 And only herald to the gaudy spring,  
 Within thine own bud buriest thy content,  
 And, tender churl, makest waste in niggarding.  
 Pity the world, or else this glutton be,  
 To eat the world's due, by the grave and thee.

## II.

When forty winters shall besiege thy brow,  
 And dig deep trenches in thy beauty's field,  
 Thy youth's proud livery, so gazed on now,  
 Will be a tatter'd weed, of small worth held :  
 Then, being ask'd where all thy beauty lies,  
 Where all the treasure of thy lusty days ;  
 To say, within thine own deep-sunken eyes,  
 Were an all-eating shame, and thriftless praise.  
 How much more praise deserved thy beauty's use,  
 If thou couldst answer,—‘ This fair child of mine  
 Shall sum my count, and make my old excuse,—  
 Proving his beauty by succession thine.

This were to be new-made when thou art old,  
 And see thy blood warm when thou feel'st it  
 cold.

## III.

Look in thy glass, and tell the face thou viewest,  
 Now is the time that face should form another ;  
 Whose fresh repair if now thou not renewest,  
 Thou dost beguile the world, unbless some mother :

For where is she so fair, whose unear'd<sup>1</sup> womb  
 Disdains the tillage of thy husbandry ?  
 Or who is he so fond,<sup>2</sup> will be the tomb  
 Of his self-love, to stop posterity ?  
 Thou art thy mother's glass, and she in thee  
 Calls back the lovely April of her prime :  
 So thou through windows of thine age shalt see,  
 Despite of wrinkles, this thy golden time.  
 But if thou live, remember'd not to be,  
 Die single, and thine image dies with thee.

## IV.

Unthrifty loveliness, why dost thou spend  
 Upon thyself thy beauty's legacy ?  
 Nature's bequest gives nothing, but doth lend ;  
 And being frank, she lends to those are free.  
 Then, beauteous niggard, why dost thou abuse  
 The bounteous largess given thee to give ?  
 Profitless usurer, why dost thou use  
 So great a sum of sums, yet canst not live ?  
 For having traffic with thyself alone,  
 Thou of thyself thy sweet self dost deceive :  
 Then how, when Nature calls thee to be gone,  
 What acceptable audit eanst thou leave ?  
 Thy unused beauty must be tomb'd with thee,  
 Which, used, lives thy executor to be.

<sup>1</sup> Unploughed.<sup>2</sup> Foolish.

## V.

Those hours, that with gentle work did frame  
 'The lovely gaze where every eye doth dwell,  
 Will play the tyrants to the very same,  
 And that unfair, which fairly doth excel ;<sup>1</sup>  
 For never-resting time leads summer on  
 To hideous winter, and confounds him there ;  
 Sap check'd with frost, and lusty leaves quite gone,  
 Beauty o'ersnow'd, and bareness every where :  
 Then, were not summer's distillation left,  
 A liquid prisoner pent in walls of glass,  
 Beauty's effect with beauty were bereft,  
 Nor it, nor no remembrance what it was :  
 But flowers distill'd, though they with winter  
 meet,  
 Leese<sup>2</sup> but their show ; their substance still lives  
 sweet.

## VI.

Then let not winter's ragged hand deface  
 In thee thy summer, ere thou be distill'd :  
 Make sweet some phial ; treasure thou some place  
 With beauty's treasure, ere it be self-kill'd.  
 That use is not forbidden usury,  
 Which happies those that pay the willing loan ;

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. and render that which was once beautiful no longer  
 fair. <sup>2</sup> Lose.

That's for thyself to breed another thee,  
Or ten times happier, be it ten for one ;  
Ten times thyself were happier than thou art,  
If ten of thine ten times refigured thee :  
Then, what could Death do, if thou shouldst  
depart,  
Leaving thee living in posterity ?  
Be not self-will'd ; for thou art much too fair  
To be Death's conquest, and make worms thine  
heir.

## VII.

Lo, in the orient when the gracious light  
Lifts up his burning head, each under eye  
Doth homage to his new-appearing sight,  
Serving with looks his sacred majesty ;  
And, having climb'd the steep-up heavenly hill,  
Resembling strong youth in his middle age,  
Yet mortal looks adore his beauty still,  
Attending on his golden pilgrimage :  
But when from highmost pitch, with weary car,  
Like feeble age, he reeleth from the day,  
The eyes, 'fore duteous, now converted are  
From his low tract, and look another way :  
So thou, thyself outgoing in thy noon,  
Unlook'd on diest, unless thou get a son.

## VIII.

Music to hear, why hear'st thou music sadly ?<sup>1</sup>  
 Sweets with sweets war not, joy delights in joy.

Why lovest thou that which thou receivest not  
 gladly ;

Or else receivest with pleasure thine annoy ?  
 If the true concord of well-tuned sounds,  
 By unions married, do offend thine ear,  
 They do but sweetly chide thee, who confounds  
 In singleness the parts that thou shouldst bear.  
 Mark, how one string, sweet husband to another,  
 Strikes each in each by mutual ordering ;

Resembling sire, and child, and happy mother ;  
 Who, all in one, one pleasing note do sing :

Whose speechless song, being many, seeming  
 one,

Sings this to thee ;—‘Thou single wilt prove  
 none.’

## IX.

Is it for fear to wet a widow's eye,  
 That thou consumest thyself in single life ?

Ah ! if thou issueless shalt hap to die,

The world will wail thee, like a makeless<sup>2</sup> wife :

<sup>1</sup> i. e. O thou, whom to hear is music, why hearest thou.  
 &c.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. mateless. Make and mate were formerly synonymous.

The world will be thy widow, and still weep,  
That thou no form of thee hast left behind ;  
When every private widow well may keep,  
By children's eyes, her husband's shape in mind.  
Look, what an unthrift in the world doth spend,  
Shifts but his place, for still the world enjoys it ;  
But beauty's waste hath in the world an end ;  
And, kept unused, the user so destroys it.

No love toward others in that bosom sits,  
That on himself such murderous shame commits.

## X.

For shame ! deny that thou bear'st love to any,  
Who for thyself art so unprovident :  
Grant, if thou wilt, thou art beloved of many ;  
But that thou none lovest, is most evident ;  
For thou art so possess'd with murderous hate,  
That 'gainst thyself thou stick'st not to conspire,  
Seeking that beauteous roof to ruinate,  
Which to repair should be thy chief desire.  
O, change thy thought, that I may change my  
mind !

Shall hate be fairer lodged than gentle love ?  
Be, as thy presence is, gracious and kind ;  
Or to thyself, at least, kind-hearted prove :  
Make thee another self, for love of me,  
That beauty still may live in thine or thee.

## xi.

As fast as thou shalt wane, so fast thou growest,  
 In one of thine, from that which thou departest ;  
 And that fresh blood, which youngly thou bestowest  
 'Thou mayst call thine, when thou from youth con-  
 vertest.

Herein lives wisdom, beauty, and increase ;  
 Without this, folly, age, and cold decay :  
 If all were minded so, the times should cease,  
 And threescore years would make the world away.  
 Let those, whom Nature hath not made for store,<sup>1</sup>  
 Harsh, featureless, and rude, barrenly perish :  
 Look, whom she best endow'd, she gave thee  
 more ;  
 Which bounteous gift thou shouldst in bounty  
 cherish :  
 She carved thee for her seal, and meant thereby,  
 Thou shouldst print more, nor let that copy die.

## xii.

When I do count the clock that tells the time,  
 And see the brave day sunk in hideous night ;  
 When I behold the violet past prime,  
 And sable curls all silver'd o'er with white ;  
 When lofty trees I see barren of leaves,  
 Which erst from heat did canopy the herd ;

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. to be preserved for use.

And summer's green all girded up in sheaves,  
Borne on the bier with white and bristly beard ;—  
Then of thy beauty do I question make,  
That thou among the wastes of time must go,  
Since sweets and beauties do themselves forsake,  
And die as fast as they see others grow ;  
And nothing 'gainst time's scythe can make defence,  
Save breed, to brave him when he takes thee hence.

## XIII.

O, that you were yourself ! but, love, you are  
No longer yours, than you yourself here live :  
Against this coming end you should prepare,  
And your sweet semblance to some other give :  
So should that beauty, which you hold in lease,  
Find no determination : then you were  
Yourself again, after yourself's decease,  
When your sweet issue your sweet form should bear.

Who lets so fair a house fall to decay,  
Which husbandry in honor might uphold  
Against the stormy gusts of winter's day,  
And barren rage of death's eternal cold ?

O, none but unthrifts !—Dear my love, you know,

You had a father ; let your son say so.

## XIV.

Not from the stars do I my judgment pluck;  
 And yet, methinks, I have astronomy;  
 But not to tell of good or evil luck,  
 Of plagues, of dearths, or seasons' quality:  
 Nor can I fortune to brief minutes tell,  
 Pointing to each his thunder, rain, and wind;  
 Or say, with princes if it shall go well,  
 By oft predict that I in heaven find:  
 But from thine eyes my knowlege I derive;  
 And, constant stars, in them I read such art,  
 As truth and beauty shall together thrive,  
 If from thyself to store thou wouldest convert;<sup>1</sup>  
 Or else of thee this I prognosticate;—  
 Thy end is truth's and beauty's doom and date.

## XV.

When I consider every thing that grows  
 Holds in perfection but a little moment;  
 That this huge state presenteth naught but shows,  
 Whereon the stars in secret influence comment;  
 When I perceive that men as plants increase,  
 Cheered and check'd even by the selfsame sky;  
 Vaunt in their youthful sap, at height decrease,  
 And wear their brave state out of memory;—

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. if thou wouldest change thy single state, and beget a numerous progeny.

Then the conceit of this inconstant stay  
 Sets you most rich in youth before my sight,  
 Where wasteful time debateth with decay,  
 To change your day of youth to sullied night;  
 And, all in war with time, for love of you,  
 As he takes from you, I engrift you new.

## xvi.

But wherefore do not you a mightier way  
 Make war upon this bloody tyrant, Time?  
 And fortify yourself in your decay  
 With means more blessed than my barren rhyme?  
 Now stand you on the top of happy hours;  
 And many maiden gardens, yet unset,  
 With virtuous wish would bear you living flowers,  
 Much liker than your painted counterfeit:<sup>1</sup>  
 So should the lines of life that life repair,  
 Which this, Time's pencil, or my pupil pen,  
 Neither in inward worth, nor outward fair,<sup>2</sup>  
 Can make you live yourself in eyes of men.

To give away yourself, keeps yourself still;  
 And you must live, drawn by your own sweet  
 skill.

## xvii.

Who will believe my verse in time to come  
 If it were fill'd with your most high deserts?

---

<sup>1</sup> Portrait.

<sup>2</sup> Beauty.

Though yet, Heaven knows, it is but as a tomb,  
Which hides your life, and shows not half your  
parts.

If I could write the beauty of your eyes,  
And in fresh numbers number all your graces ;  
The age to come would say, this poet lies ;  
Such heavenly touches ne'er touch'd earthly faces.  
So should my papers, yellow'd with their age,  
Be scorn'd, like old men of less truth than tongue ;  
And your true rights be term'd a poet's rage,  
And stretched metre of an antique song :

But were some child of yours alive that time,  
You should live twice ;—in it, and in my rhyme.

## XVIII.

Shall I compare thee to a summer's day ?  
Thou art more lovely and more temperate :  
Rough winds do shake the darling buds of May,  
And summer's lease hath all too short a date :  
Sometime too hot the eye of heaven shines,  
And often is his gold complexion dimm'd ;  
And every fair from fair sometime declines,  
By chance, or nature's changing course, untrimm'd :  
But thy eternal summer shall not fade,  
Nor lose possession of that fair thou owest ;<sup>1</sup>  
Nor shall Death brag thou wander'st in his shade,  
When in eternal lines to time thou growest.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. of that beauty thou possessest.

So long as men can breathe, or eyes can see,  
So long lives this, and this gives life to thee.

## xix.

Devouring Time, blunt thou the lion's paws,  
And make the earth devour her own sweet brood ;  
Pluck the keen teeth from the fierce tiger's jaws,  
And burn the long-lived phœnix in her blood :  
Make glad and sorry seasons, as thou fleet'st,  
And do whate'er thou wilt, swift-footed Time,  
To the wide world, and all her fading sweets ;  
But I forbid thee onc most heinous crime :—  
O, carve not with thy hours my love's fair brow,  
Nor draw no lines there with thine antique pen :  
Him in thy course untainted do allow,  
For beauty's pattern to succeeding men.

Yet, do thy worst, old Time : despite thy wrong,  
My love shall in my verse ever live young.

## xx.

A woman's face, with Nature's own hand painted,  
Hast thou, the master-mistress of my passion ;  
A woman's gentle heart, but not acquainted  
With shifting change, as is false women's fashion ;  
An eye more bright than theirs, less false in rolling,  
Gilding the object whereupon it gazeth ;  
A man in hue all hues in his controlling,  
Which steals men's eyes, and women's souls  
amazeth.

And for a woman wert thou first created;  
 Till Nature, as she wrought thee, fell a doting;  
 And by addition me of thee defeated,  
 By adding one thing to my purpose nothing.

But since she prick'd thee out for women's  
 pleasure,  
 Mine be thy love, and thy love's use their trea-  
 sure.

## xxi.

So is it not with me as with that Muse,  
 Stirr'd by a painted beauty to his verse;  
 Who heaven itself for ornament doth use,  
 And every fair with his fair doth rehearse;  
 Making a complement of proud compare,  
 With sun and moon, with earth and sea's rich  
 gems,  
 With April's first-born flowers, and all things rare  
 That heaven's air in this huge rondure<sup>1</sup> hemms.  
 O, let me, true in love, but truly write;  
 And then believe me, my love is as fair  
 As any mother's child, though not so bright  
 As those gold candles fix'd in heaven's air.  
 Let them say more that like of hearsay well:  
 I will not praise, that purpose not to sell.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. round, circumference.

## XXII.

My glass shall not persuade me I am old,  
 So long as youth and thou are of one date ;  
 But when in thee time's furrows I behold,  
 Then look I death my days should expiate.<sup>1</sup>  
 For all that beauty that doth cover thee,  
 Is but the seemly raiment of my heart,  
 Which in thy breast doth live, as thine in me ;  
 How can I then be elder than thou art ?  
 O, therefore, love, be of thyself so wary,  
 As I not for myself but for thee will ;  
 Bearing thy heart, which I will keep so chary  
 As tender nurse her babe from faring ill.  
 Presume not on thy heart when mine is slain ;  
 Thou gavest me thine, not to give back again.

## XXIII.

As an unperfect actor on the stage,  
 Who with his fear is put besides his part,  
 Or some fierce thing replete with too much rage,  
 Whose strength's abundance weakens his own  
 heart ;—  
 So I, for fear of trust, forget to say  
 The perfect ceremony of love's rite ;  
 And in mine own love's strength seem to decay,  
 O'ercharged with burthen of mine own love's might.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. fill up the measure of my days.

O, let my books be then the eloquence  
 And dumb presagers of my speaking breast;  
 Who plead for love, and look for recompense,  
 More than that tongue that more hath more ex-  
 press'd.

O, learn to read what silent love hath writ:  
 To hear with eyes belongs to love's fine wit.

## XXIV.

Mine eye hath play'd the painter, and hath steel'd  
 Thy beauty's form in table of my heart:  
 My body is the frame wherein 'tis held,  
 And perspective it is best painter's art:  
 For through the painter must you see his skill,  
 To find where your true image pictured lies,  
 Which in my bosom's shop is hanging still,  
 That hath his windows glazed with thine eyes.  
 Now see what good turns eyes for eyes have done:  
 Mine eyes have drawn thy shape, and thine for me  
 Are windows to my breast, where-through the sun  
 Delights to peep, to gaze therein on thee:

Yet eyes this cunning want to grace their art;—  
 They draw but what they see, know not the  
 heart.

## XXV.

Let those who are in favor with their stars,  
 Of public honor and proud titles boast;  
 Whilst I, whom Fortune of such triumph bars,  
 Unlook'd-for joy in that I honor most.

Great princes' favorites their fair leaves spread,  
But as the marigold at the sun's eye ;  
And in themselves their pride lies buried ;  
For at a frown they in their glory die.  
The painful warrior famoused for fight,  
After a thousand victories once foil'd,  
Is from the book of honor rased quite,  
And all the rest forgot for which he toil'd :  
Then happy I, that love and am beloved,  
Where I may not remove, nor be removed.

## xxvi.

Lord of my love, to whom in vassalage  
Thy merit hath my duty strongly knit,  
To thee I send this written embassage,  
To witness duty, not to show my wit :  
Duty so great, which wit so poor as mine  
May make seem bare, in wanting words to show it ;  
But that I hope some good conceit of thine  
In thy soul's thought, all naked, will bestow it :  
Till whatsoever star that guides my moving,  
Points on me graciously with fair aspect,  
And puts apparel on my tatter'd loving,  
To show me worthy of thy sweet respect :  
Then may I dare to boast how I do love thee ;  
Till then, not show my head where thou mayst  
prove me.

## XXVII.

Weary with toil, I haste me to my bed,  
The dear repose for limbs with travel tired ;  
But then begins a journey in my head,  
To work my mind, when body's work 's expired :  
For then my thoughts (from far where I abide)  
Intend a zealous pilgrimage to thee,  
And keep my drooping eyelids open wide,  
Looking on darkness which the blind do see :  
Save that my soul's imaginary sight  
Presents thy shadow to my sightless view,  
Which, like a jewel hung in ghastly night,  
Makes black night beauteous, and her old face  
new.

Lo, thus, by day my limbs, by night my mind,  
For thee, and for myself, no quiet find.

## XXVIII.

How can I then return in happy plight,  
That am debarr'd the benefit of rest ;  
When day's oppression is not eased by night,  
But day by night, and night by day oppress'd ?  
And each, though enemies to either's reign,  
Do in consent shake hands to torture me ;  
The one by toil, the other to complain  
How far I toil, still farther off from thee.  
I tell the day, to please him, thou art bright,  
And dost him grace when clouds do blot the  
heaven :

So flatter I the swart-complexion'd night;  
 When sparkling stars twire<sup>1</sup> not, thou gild'st the  
 even.  
 But day doth daily draw my sorrows longer,  
 And night doth nightly make grief's length seem  
 stronger.

## xxix.

When in disgrace with fortune and men's eyes,  
 I all alone beweep my outcast state,  
 And trouble deaf heaven with my bootless cries,  
 And look upon myself, and curse my fate,  
 Wishing me like to one more rich in hope,  
 Featured like him, like him with friends possess'd,  
 Desiring this man's art, and that man's scope,  
 With what I most enjoy contented least;  
 Yet in these thoughts myself almost despising,  
 Haply I think on thee ; and then my state,  
 Like to the lark at break of day arising  
 From sullen earth, sings hymns at heaven's gate :  
 For thy sweet love remember'd, such wealth  
 brings,  
 That then I scorn to change my state with kings.

## xxx.

When to the sessions of sweet silent thought  
 I summon up remembrance of things past,

---

<sup>1</sup> Peep.

I sigh the lack of many a thing I sought,  
 And with old woes new wail my dear time's was.  
 Then can I drown an eye, unused to flow,  
 For precious friends hid in death's dateless night,  
 And weep afresh love's long-since cancell'd woe,  
 And moan the expense of many a vanish'd sight:  
 Then can I grieve at grievances foregone,  
 And heavily from woe to woe tell o'er  
 The sad account of fore-bemoaned moan,  
 Which I new pay as if not paid before:  
 But if the while I think on thee, dear friend,  
 All losses are restored, and sorrows end.

## XXXI.

Thy bosom is endeared with all hearts,  
 Which I by lacking have supposed dead;  
 And there reigns love, and all love's loving parts,  
 And all those friends which I thought buried.  
 How many a holy and obsequious<sup>1</sup> tear  
 Hath dear religious love stolen from mine eye,  
 As interest of the dead, which now appear  
 But things removed, that hidden in thee lie!  
 Thou art the grave where buried love doth live,  
 Hung with the trophies of my lovers gone,  
 Who all their parts of me to thee did give;  
 That due of many now is thine alone.  
 Their images I loved I view in thee;  
 And thou, all they, hast all the all of me.

---

<sup>1</sup> Funereal.

## XXXII.

If thou survive my well-contented day,  
When that churl Death my bones with dust shall  
cover,  
And shalt by fortune once more resurvey  
These poor rude lines of thy deceased lover ;—  
Compare them with the bettering of the time ;  
And though they be outstripp'd by every pen,  
Reserve them for my love, not for their rhyme,  
Exceeded by the height of happier men.  
O, then vouchsafe me but this loving thought :—  
‘ Had my friend’s Muse grown with this growing  
age,  
A dearer birth than this his love had brought,  
To march in ranks of better equipage :  
But since he died, and poets better prove,  
Theirs for their style I’ll read, his for his love.’

## XXXIII.

Full many a glorious morning have I seen  
Flatter the mountain tops with sovereign eye,  
Kissing with golden face the meadows green,  
Gilding pale streams with heavenly alchymy ;  
Anon permit the basest clouds to ride  
With ugly rack<sup>1</sup> on his celestial face,  
And from the forlorn world his visage hide,  
Stealing unseen to west with this disgrace :

---

<sup>1</sup> Vapors.

Even so my sun one early morn did shine,  
 With all triumphant splendor on my brow ;  
 But, out, alack ! he was but one hour mine ;  
 The region cloud hath mask'd him from me now.

Yet him for this my love no whit disdaineth ;  
 Suns of the world may stain, when heaven's sun  
 staineth.

## XXXIV.

Why didst thou promise such a beauteous day,  
 And make me travel forth without my cloak,  
 To let base clouds o'ertake me in my way,  
 Hiding thy bravery in their rotten smoke ?  
 'Tis not enough that through the cloud thou break,  
 To dry the rain on my storm-beaten face,  
 For no man well of such a salve can speak,  
 That heals the wound, and cures not the disgrace :  
 Nor can thy shame give physic to my grief ;  
 Though thou repent, yet I have still the loss :  
 The offender's sorrow lends but weak relief  
 To him that bears the strong offence's cross.

Ah ! but those tears are pearl which thy love  
 sheds ;  
 And they are rich, and ransom all ill deeds.

## XXXV.

No more be grieved at that which thou hast done :  
 Roses have thorns, and silver fountains mud ;  
 Clouds and eclipses stain both moon and sun,  
 And loathsome canker lives in sweetest bud.

All' men make faults, and even I in this,  
 Authorising thy trespass with compare,  
 Myself corrupting, salving thy amiss,<sup>1</sup>  
 Excusing thy sins more than thy sins are :<sup>2</sup>  
 For to thy sensual fault I bring in sense,  
 (Thy adverse party is thy advocate)  
 And 'gainst myself a lawful plea commence :  
 Such civil war is in my love and hate,  
 That I an accessory needs must be  
 To that sweet thief, which sourly robs from me.

## xxxvi.

Let me confess that we two must be twain,  
 Although our undivided loves are one :  
 So shall those blots that do with me remain,  
 Without thy help, by me be borne alone.  
 In our two loves there is but one respect,  
 Though in our lives a separable spite ;<sup>3</sup>  
 Which, though it alter not love's sole effect,  
 Yet doth it steal sweet hours from love's delight.  
 I may not evermore acknowlege thee,  
 Lest my bewailed guilt should do thee shame ;  
 Nor thou with public kindness honor me,  
 Unless thou take that honor from thy name :

---

<sup>1</sup> Misbehavior.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. making the excuse more than proportioned to the offence.

<sup>3</sup> i. e. a cruel fate, that spitefully separates us from each other

But do not so : I love thee in such sort.  
As thou being mine, mine is thy good report.

## xxxvii.

As a decrepit father takes delight  
To see his active child do deeds of youth ;  
So I, made lame by fortune's dearest<sup>1</sup> spite,  
Take all my comfort of thy worth and truth ;  
For whether beauty, birth, or wealth, or wit,  
Or any of these all, or all, or more,  
Entitled in thy parts<sup>2</sup> do crowned sit,  
I make my love engrafted to this store :  
So then I am not lame, poor, nor despised,  
Whilst that this shadow doth such substance give,  
That I in thy abundance am sufficed,  
And by a part of all thy glory live.

Look what is best, that best I wish in thee :  
This wish I have ; then ten times happy me !

## xxxviii.

How can my Muse want subject to invent,  
While thou dost breathe, that pour'st into my verse  
Thine own sweet argument, too excellent  
For every vulgar paper to rehearse ?  
O, give thyself the thanks, if aught in me.  
Worthy perusal, stand against thy sight ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Most inveterate.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. having a claim or title to thy parts.

For who's so dumb that cannot write to thee,  
When thou thyself dost give invention light?  
Be thou the tenth Muse, ten times more in worth  
Than those old nine, which rhymers invocate;  
And he that calls on thee, let him bring forth  
Eternal numbers to outlive long date.

If my slight Muse do please these curious days,  
The pain be mine, but thine shall be the praise.

## xxxix.

O, how thy worth with manners may I sing,  
When thou art all the better part of me?  
What can mine own praise to mine own self bring  
And what is't but mine own, when I praise thee?  
Even for this let us divided live,  
And our dear love lose name of single one;  
That by this separation I may give  
That due to thee, which thou deservest alone.  
O absence, what a torment wouldest thou prove,  
Were it not thy sour leisure gave sweet leave  
To entertain the time with thoughts of love,  
Which time and thoughts so sweetly doth de-  
ceive;  
And that thou teachest how to make one twain,  
By praising him here, who doth hence remain!

## XL.

Take all my loves, my love, yea, take them all;  
What hast thou then more than thou hadst before?

No love, my love, that thou mayst true love call;  
All mine was thine, before thou hadst this more.  
Then, if for my love thou my love receivest,  
I cannot blame thee, for my love thou usest;  
But yet be blamed, if thou thyself deceivest  
By wilful taste of what thyself refusest.  
I do forgive thy robbery, gentle thief,  
Although thou steal thee all my poverty:  
And yet love knows, it is a greater grief  
To bear love's wrong, than hate's known injury  
Lascivious grace, in whom all ill well shows,  
Kill me with spites; yet we must not be foes.

## XLI.

Those petty wrongs that liberty commits,  
When I am sometime absent from thy heart,  
Thy beauty and thy years full well befits,  
For still temptation follows where thou art.  
Gentle thou art, and therefore to be won;  
Beauteous thou art, therefore to be assail'd;  
And when a woman woos, what woman's son  
Will sourly leave her till she have prevail'd?  
Ah me! but yet thou mightst, my sweet, forbear,  
And chide thy beauty and thy straying youth,  
Who lead thee in their riot even there  
Where thou art forced to break a twofold truth;  
Hers, by thy beauty tempting her to thee;  
Thine, by thy beauty being false to me.

## XLII.

That thou hast her, it is not all my grief;  
And yet it may be said I loved her dearly :  
That she hath thee, is of my wailing chief;  
A loss in love that touches me more nearly.  
Loving offenders, thus I will excuse ye :—  
Thou dost love her, because thou knew'st I love  
her ;

And for my sake even so doth she abuse me,  
Suffering my friend for my sake to approve her.  
If I lose thee, my loss is my love's gain ;  
And losing her, my friend hath found that loss ;  
Both find each other, and I lose both twain,  
And both for my sake lay on me this cross :  
But here 's the joy ; my friend and I are one :  
Sweet flattery ! then she loves but me alone.

## XLIII.

When most I wink, then do mine eyes best see,  
For all the day they view things unrespected :<sup>1</sup>  
But when I sleep, in dreams they look on thee,  
And, darkly bright, are bright in dark directed.  
Then thou, whose shadow shadows doth make  
bright,  
How would thy shadow's form form happy show

---

<sup>1</sup> Unregarded.

To the clear day with thy much clearer light,  
 When to unseeing eyes thy shade shines so ?  
 How would, I say, mine eyes be blessed made  
 By looking on thee in the living day ;  
 When in dead night thy fair imperfect shade  
 Through heavy sleep on sightless eyes doth stay ?  
 All days are nights to see, till I see thee ;  
 And nights, bright days, when dreams do show  
 thee me.

## XLIV.

If the dull substance of my flesh were thought,  
 Injurious distance should not stop my way ;  
 For then, despite of space, I would be brought  
 From limits far remote, where thou dost stay.  
 No matter then, although my foot did stand  
 Upon the farthest earth removed from thee ;  
 For nimble thought can jump both sea and land,  
 As soon as think the place where he would be.  
 But, ah ! thought kills me, that I am not thought,  
 To leap large lengths of miles when thou art gone  
 But that, so much of earth and water wrought,<sup>1</sup>  
 I must attend time's leisure with my moan ;  
 Receiving naught, by elements so slow,  
 But heavy tears, badges of either's woe :

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. being so thoroughly compounded of these two ponderous elements

## XLV.

The other two, slight air and purging fire,  
Are both with thee, wherever I abide ;  
The first my thought, the other my desire ;  
These present-absent with swift motion slide :  
For when these quicker elements are gone  
In tender embassy of love to thee,  
My life, being made of four, with two alone  
Sinks down to death, oppress'd with melancholy ;  
Until life's composition be recured  
By those swift messengers return'd from thee,  
Who even but now come back again, assured  
Of thy fair health, recounting it to me :  
    This told, I joy ; but then no longer glad,  
    I send them back again, and straight grow sad.

## XLVI.

Mine eye and heart are at a mortal war,  
How to divide the conquest of thy sight ;  
Mine eye my heart thy picture's sight would bar,  
My heart mine eye the freedom of that right.  
My heart doth plead, that thou in him dost lie,  
A closet never pierced with crystal eyes ;  
But the defendant doth that plea deny,  
And says in him thy fair appearance lies.  
To 'cide this title is impannelled  
A quest of thoughts, all tenants to the heart ;  
And by their verdict is determined  
The clear eye's moiety, and the dear heart's part :

As thus ;—Mine eye's due is thine outward part,  
And my heart's right thine inward love of heart.

## XLVII.

Betwixt mine eye and heart a league is took,  
And each doth good turns now unto the other :  
When that mine eye is famish'd for a look,  
Or heart in love with sighs himself doth smother,  
With my love's picture then my eye doth feast,  
And to the painted banquet bids my heart :  
Another time mine eye is my heart's guest,  
And in his thoughts of love doth share a part :  
So, either by thy picture or my love,  
Thyself away art present still with me ;  
For thou not farther than my thoughts canst  
move,  
And I am still with them, and they with thee ;  
Or, if they sleep, thy picture in my sight  
Awakes my heart to heart's and eye's delight.

## XLVIII.

How careful was I, when I took my way,  
Each trifle under truest bars to thrust,  
That, to my use, it might unused stay  
From hands of falsehood, in sure wards of trust !  
But thou, to whom my jewels trifles are,  
Most worthy comfort, now my greatest grief ;  
Thou, best of dearest, and mine only care,  
Art left the prey of every vulgar thief.

Thee have I not lock'd up in any chest,  
 Save where thou art not, though I feel thou art,  
 Within the gentle closure of my breast,  
 From whence at pleasure thou mayst come and  
 part;  
 And even thence thou wilt be stolen I fear,  
 For truth proves thievish for a prize so dear.

## XLIX.

Against that time, if ever that time come,  
 When I shall see thee frown on my defects,  
 Whenas thy love hath cast his utmost sum,  
 Call'd to that audit by advised respects;—  
 Against that time, when thou shalt strangely pass,  
 And scarcely greet me with that sun, thine eye;—  
 When love, converted from the thing it was,  
 Shall reasons find of settled gravity;—  
 Against that time do I ensconce<sup>1</sup> me here  
 Within the knowlege of mine own desert,  
 And this my hand against myself uprear,  
 To guard the lawful reasons on thy part:  
 To leave poor me thou hast the strength of laws,  
 Since, why to love, I can allege no cause.

## L.

How heavy do I journey on the way,  
 When what I seek,—my weary travels' end,—

---

<sup>1</sup> Fortify.

Doth teach that ease and that repose to say,  
 ' Thus far the miles are measured from thy friend ! '  
 The beast that bears me, tired with my woe,  
 Plods dully on, to bear that weight in me ;  
 As if by some instinct the wretch did know  
 His rider loved not speed, being made from thee :  
 The bloody spur cannot provoke him on,  
 That sometimes anger thrusts into his hide,  
 Which heavily he answers with a groan,  
 More sharp to me than spurring to his side ;  
 For that same groan doth put this in my mind :—  
 My grief lies onward, and my joy behind.

## LI.

Thus can my love excuse the slow offence  
 Of my dull bearer, when from thee I speed :  
 From where thou art why should I haste me  
 thence ?  
 Till I return, of posting is no need.  
 O, what excuse will my poor beast then find,  
 When swift extremity can seem but slow ?  
 Then should I spur, though mounted on the wind ;  
 In winged speed no motion shall I know :  
 Then can no horse with my desire keep pace ;  
 Therefore desire, of perfect love being made,  
 Shall neigh (no dull flesh) in his fiery race ;  
 But love, for love, thus shall excuse my jade :—  
 Since from thee going he went wilful-slow,  
 Towards thee I 'll run, and give him leave to go.

## LII.

So am I as the rich, whose blessed kev  
 Can bring him to his sweet uplocked treasure,  
 The which he will not every hour survev,  
 For blunting the fine point of seldom pleasure.  
 Therefore are feasts so solemn and so rare,  
 Since seldom coming, in the long year set ;  
 Like stones of worth they thinly placed are,  
 Or captain<sup>1</sup> jewels in the carcanet.<sup>2</sup>  
 So is the time that keeps you, as my chest,  
 Or as the wardrobe which the robe doth hide,  
 To make some special instant special-bless'd,  
 By new unfolding his imprison'd pride.

Blessed are you, whose worthiness gives scope ;  
 Being had, to triumph ; being lack'd, to hope.

## LIII.

What is your substance, whereof are you made,  
 That millions of strange shadows on you tend ?  
 Since every one hath, every one, one shade ;  
 And you, but one, can every shadow lend.  
 Describe Adonis, and the counterfeit<sup>3</sup>  
 Is poorly imitated after you ;  
 On Helen's cheek all art of beauty set,  
 And you in Grecian tires are painted new :

<sup>1</sup> Chief, most valuable.

<sup>2</sup> Necklace.

<sup>3</sup> Portrait.

Speak of the spring, and foison<sup>1</sup> of the year;  
 The one doth shadow of your beauty show.  
 The other as your bounty doth appear,  
 And you in every blessed shape we know.

In all external grace you have some part;  
 But you like none, none you, for constant heart.

## LIV.

O, how much more doth beauty beauteous seem,  
 By that sweet ornament which truth doth give!  
 The rose looks fair, but fairer we it deem  
 For that sweet odor which doth in it live.  
 The canker-blooms<sup>2</sup> have full as deep a die,  
 As the perfumed tincture of the roses;  
 Hang on such thorns, and play as wantonly,  
 When summer's breath their masked buds dis-  
 closes:  
 But, for their virtue only is their show;  
 They live unwoo'd, and unrespected fade;  
 Die to themselves. Sweet roses do not so;  
 Of their sweet deaths are sweetest odors made:  
 And so of you, beauteous and lovely youth;  
 When that shall fade, my verse distils your  
 truth.

---

<sup>1</sup> Plenty.

<sup>2</sup> I. e. the blossoms of the canker-rose, or dog-rose.

## LV.

Not marble, nor the gilded monuments  
Of princes, shall outlive this powerful rhyme ;  
But you shall shine more bright in these contents  
Than unswept stone, besmear'd with sluttish time.  
When wasteful war shall ~~statues~~ overturn,  
And broils root out the work of masonry,  
Nor Mars his sword nor war's quick fire shall burn  
The living record of your memory.  
'Gainst death and all-oblivious enmity  
Shall you pace forth ; your praise shall still find  
room,  
Even in the eyes of all posterity,  
That wear this world out to the ending doom.  
So, till the judgment that yourself arise,  
You live in this, and dwell in lovers' eyes.

## LVI.

Sweet love, renew thy force ; be it not said,  
Thy edge should blunter be than appetite,  
Which but to-day by feeding is allay'd,  
To-morrow sharpen'd in his former might :  
So, love, be thou ; although to-day thou fill  
Thy hungry eyes, even till they wink with fulness,  
To-morrow see again, and do not kill  
The spirit of love with a perpetual dulness.  
Let this sad interim like the ocean be  
Which parts the shore, where two contracted-new

Come daily to the banks, that, when they see  
 Return of love, more bless'd may be the view  
 Or call it winter, which, being full of care,  
 Makes summer's welcome thrice more wish'd,  
 more rare.

## LVII.

Being your slave, what should I do but tend  
 Upon the hours and times of your desire?  
 I have no precious time at all to spend,  
 Nor services to do, till you require:  
 Nor dare I chide the world-without-end hour,<sup>1</sup>  
 Whilst I, my sovereign, watch the clock for you;  
 Nor think the bitterness of absence sour,  
 When you have bid your servant once adieu;  
 Nor dare I question with my jealous thought  
 Where you may be, or your affairs suppose;  
 But, like a sad slave, stay and think of naught,  
 Save, where you are, how happy you make those:  
 So true a fool is love, that in your will,  
 Though you do any thing, he thinks no ill.

## LVIII.

That God forbid, that made me first your slave,  
 I should in thought control your times of pleasure;

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. the tedious hour that seems as if it never would  
 ent.

Or at your hand the account of hours to crave,  
Being your vassal, bound to stay your leisure !  
O, let me suffer, being at your beck,  
The imprison'd absence of your liberty ;  
And patience, tame to sufferance, bide each check,  
Without accusing you of injury.  
Be where you list ; your charter is so strong,  
That you yourself may privilege your time ;  
Do what you will, to you it doth belong  
Yourself to pardon of self-doing crime.  
I am to wait, though waiting so be hell ;  
Not blame your pleasure, be it ill or well.

## LIX.

If there be nothing new, but that, which is,  
Hath been before, how are our brains beguiled,  
Which, laboring for invention, bear amiss  
The second burthen of a former child ?  
O, that record could with a backward look,  
Even of five hundred courses of the sun,  
Show me your image in some antique book,  
Since mind at first in character was done !  
That I might see what the old world could say  
To this composed wonder of your frame ;  
Whether we are mended, or whe'r better they,  
Or whether revolution be the same.  
O ! sure I am, the wits of former days  
To subjects worse have given admiring praise.

## LX.

Like as the waves make towards the pebbled shore,  
So do our minutes hasten to their end ;  
Each changing place with that which goes before ;  
In sequent toil all forwards do contend.  
Nativity, once in the main<sup>1</sup> of light,  
Crawls to maturity, wherewith being crown'd,  
Crooked eclipses 'gainst his glory fight ;  
And time that gave, doth now his gift confound.  
Time doth transfix the florish set on youth,  
And delves the parallels in beauty's brow ;  
Feeds on the rarities of nature's truth,  
And nothing stands but for his scythe to mow :  
And yet, to times in hope, my verse shall stand,  
Praising thy worth, despite his cruel hand.

## LXI.

Is it thy will, thy image should keep open  
My heavy eyelids to the weary night ?  
Dost thou desire my slumbers should be broken,  
While shadows, like to thee, do mock my sight ?  
Is it thy spirit that thou send'st from thee  
So far from home, into my deeds to pry ;  
To find out shames and idle hours in me,  
The scope and tenor of thy jealousy ?

---

<sup>1</sup> In the great body.

O, no : thy love, though much, is not so great ;  
 else- my love that keeps mine eye awake ;  
 Mine own true love that doth my rest defeat,  
 To play the watchman ever for thy sake :

For thee watch I, whilst thou dost wake It is  
 where,

From me far off, with others all-too-near.

## LXII.

Sin of self-love possesseth all mine eye,  
 And all my soul, and all my every part ;  
 And for this sin there is no remedy,  
 It is so grounded inward in my heart.  
 Methinks no face so gracious <sup>1</sup> is as mine,  
 No shape so true, no truth of such account ;  
 And for myself mine own worth do define,  
 As I all other in all worths surmount.  
 But when my glass shows me myself indeed,  
 Beated and chopp'd with tann'd antiquity,  
 Mine own self-love quite contrary I read ;  
 Self so self-loving were iniquity.

'Tis thee (myself) that for myself I praise,  
 Painting my age with beauty of thy days.

## LXIII.

Against my love shall be, as I am now,  
 With time's injurious hand crush'd and o'erworn :

---

<sup>1</sup> Beautiful.

When hours have drain'd his blood, and fill'd his  
brow  
With lines and wrinkles; when his youthful morn  
Hath travell'd on to age's steepy night;  
And all those beauties, whereof now he's king,  
Are vanishing or vanish'd out of sight,  
Stealing away the treasure of his spring;—  
For such a time do I now fortify  
Against confounding age's cruel knife,  
That he shall never cut from memory  
My sweet love's beauty, though my lover's life.  
His beauty shall in these black lines be seen;  
And they shall live, and he in them still green.

## LXIV.

When I have seen by Time's fell hand defaced  
The rich-proud cost of outworn buried age;  
When sometime lofty towers I see down-rased,  
And brass eternal, slave to mortal rage;—  
When I have seen the hungry ocean gain  
Advantage on the kingdom of the shore,  
And the firm soil win of the watery main,  
Increasing store with loss, and loss with store;—  
When I have seen such interchange of state,  
Or state itself confounded to decay;—  
Ruin hath taught me thus to ruminate;—  
That time will come, and take my love away.  
This thought is as a death, which cannot choose  
But weep to have that which it fears to lose.

## LXV.

Since brass, nor stone, nor earth, nor boundless  
sea,  
But sad mortality o'ersways their power :  
How with this rage shall beauty hold a plea,  
Whose action is no stronger than a flower ?  
O, how shall summer's honey breath hold out  
Against the wreckful siege of battering days,  
When rocks impregnable are not so stout,  
Nor gates of steel so strong, but time decays ?  
O fearful meditation ! where, alack !  
Shall time's best jewel from time's chest lie hid ?  
Or what strong hand can hold his swift foot  
back ?  
Or who his spoil of beauty can forbid ?  
O, none ; unless this miracle have might ;—  
That in black ink my love may still shine bright.

## LXVI.

Tired with all these, for restful death I cry ;—  
As, to behold desert a beggar born,  
And needy nothing trimm'd in jollity,  
And purest faith unhappily forsworn,  
And gilded honor shamefully misplaced,  
And maiden virtue rudely strumpeted,  
And right perfection wrongfully disgraced,  
And strength by limping sway disabled,  
And art made tongue-tied by authority,  
And folly (doctor-like) controlling skill,

And simple truth miscall'd simplicity,  
 And captive good attending captain ill :  
 Tired with all these, from these would I be  
 gone,  
 Save that, to die, I leave my love alone.

## LXVII.

Ah ! wherefore with infection should he live,  
 And with his presence grace impiety,  
 That sin by him advantage should achieve,  
 And lace <sup>1</sup> itself with his society ?  
 Why should false painting imitate his cheek,  
 And steal dead seeing of his living hue ?  
 Why should poor beauty indirectly seek  
 Roses of shadow, since his rose is true ?  
 Why should he live, now Nature bankrupt is,  
 Beggar'd of blood to blush through lively veins ?  
 For she hath no exchequer now but his ;  
 And, proud of many, lives upon his gains.  
 O, him she stores, to show what wealth she had,  
 In days long since, before these last so bad.

## LXVIII.

Thus is his cheek the map of days outworn,  
 When beauty lived and died, as flowers do now,  
 Before these bastard signs of fair were borne,  
 Or durst inhabit on a living brow ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Embellish.

Before the golden tresses of the dead,  
 The right of sepulchres, were shorn away,  
 To live a second life on second head,  
 Ere beauty's dead fleece made another gay :  
 In him those holy antique hours are seen,  
 Without all ornament, itself, and true,  
 Making no summer of another's green,  
 Robbing no old to dress his beauty new ;  
 And him as for a map doth nature store,  
 To show false art what beauty was of yore.

## LXIX.

Those parts of thee that the world's eye doth view,  
 Want nothing that the thought of hearts can  
 mend :  
 All tongues (the voice of souls) give thee that due,  
 Uttering bare truth, even so as foes commend.  
 Thine outward thus with outward praise is crown'd ;  
 But those same tongues that give thee so thine own,  
 In other accents do this praise confound,  
 By seeing farther than the eye hath shown.  
 They look into the beauty of thy mind,  
 And that, in guess, they measure by thy deeds ;  
 Then (churls) their thoughts, although their eyes  
 were kind,  
 To thy fair flower add the rank smell of weeds :  
 But why thy odor matcheth not thy show,  
 The solve<sup>1</sup> is this ;—that thou dost common grow.

---

<sup>1</sup> Solution.

## LXX.

That thou art blamed shall not be thy defect,  
 For slander's mark was ever yet the fair ;  
 The ornament of beauty is suspect,<sup>1</sup>  
 A crow that flies in heaven's sweetest air.  
 So thou be good, slander doth but approve  
 Thy worth the greater, being woo'd of time ;  
 For canker vice the sweetest buds doth love,  
 And thou present'st a pure, unstained prime.  
 Thou hast pass'd by the ambush of young days,  
 Either not assail'd, or victor being charged ;  
 Yet this thy praise cannot be so thy praise,  
 To tie up envy, evermore enlarged :  
 If some suspect of ill mask'd not thy show,  
 Then thou alone kingdoms of hearts shouldst  
 owe.<sup>2</sup>

## LXXI.

No longer mourn for me when I am dead,  
 Than you shall hear the surly, sullen bell  
 Give warning to the world that I am fled  
 From this vile world, with vilest worms to dwell :  
 Nay, if you read this line, remember not  
 The hand that writ it ; for I love you so,  
 That I in your sweet thoughts would be forgot,  
 If thinking on me then should make you woe.

<sup>1</sup> Suspicion.

<sup>2</sup> Own, possessed.

O, if (I say) you look upon this verse,  
When I perhaps compounded am with clay,  
Do not so much as my poor name rehearse :  
But let your love even with my life decay .

Lest the wise world should look into your moan,  
And mock you with me after I am gone.

## LXXII.

O, lest the world should task you to recite  
What merit lived in me, that you should love  
After my death,—dear love, forget me quite,  
For you in me can nothing worthy prove ;  
Unless you would devise some virtuous lie,  
To do more for me than mine own desert,  
And hang more praise upon deceased I  
Than niggard truth would willingly impart.  
O, lest your true love may seem false in this,  
That you for love speak well of me untrue,  
My name be buried where my body is,  
And live no more to shame nor me nor you :  
For I am shamed by that which I bring forth ;  
And so should you, to love things nothing worth.

## LXXIII.

That time of year thou mayst in me behold,  
When yellow leaves, or none, or few, do hang  
Upon those boughs which shake against the cold ;  
Bare, ruin'd choirs, where late the sweet birds  
sang.

In me thou seest the twilight of such day,  
As after sunset fadeth in the west,  
Which by and by black night doth take away ;  
Death's second self, that seals up all in rest.  
In me thou seest the glowing of such fire,  
That on the ashes of his youth doth lie ;  
As the death-bed whereon it must expire,  
Consumed with that which it was nourish'd by.  
This thou perceivest, which makes thy love more  
strong,  
To love that well which thou must leave ere  
long.

## LXXXIV.

But be contented : when that fell arrest  
Without all bail shall carry me away.  
My life hath in this line some interest,  
Which for memorial still with thee shall stay.  
When thou reviewest this, thou dost review  
The very part was consecrate to thee.  
The earth can have but earth, which is his due ;  
My spirit is thine, the better part of me :  
So then thou hast but lost the dregs of life,  
The prey of worms, my body being dead ;  
The coward conquest of a wretch's knife,  
Too base of thee to be remembered.  
The worth of that, is that which it contains ;  
And that is this, and this with thee remains.

## LXXXV.

So are you to my thoughts, as food to life,  
 Or as sweet-season'd showers are to the ground ;  
 And for the peace of you I hold such strife  
 As twixt a miser and his wealth is found :  
 Now proud as an enjoyer, and anon  
 Doubting the filching age will steal his treasure :  
 Now counting best to be with you alone,  
 Then better'd that the world may see my pleasure :  
 Sometime, all full with feasting on your sight,  
 And by and by clean starved for a look ;  
 Possessing or pursuing no delight,  
 Save what is had or must from you be took.  
 Thus do I pine and surfeit day by day,  
 Or gluttoning on all, or all away.

## LXXXVI.

Why is my verse so barren of new pride ?  
 So far from variation or quick change ?  
 Why, with the time, do I not glance aside  
 To new-found methods and to compounds strange ?  
 Why write I still all one, ever the same,  
 And keep invention in a noted weed,  
 That every word doth almost tell my name,  
 Showing their birth, and where they did proceed ?  
 O, know, sweet love, I always write of you,  
 And you and love are still my argument ;  
 So all my best is dressing old words new,  
 Spending again what is already spent :

For as the sun is daily new and old.  
So is my love still telling what is told.

## LXXXVII.

Thy glass will show thee how thy beauties wear.  
Thy dial how thy precious minutes waste ;  
The vacant leaves thy mind's imprint will bear,  
And of this book<sup>1</sup> this learning mayst thou taste.  
The wrinkles which thy glass will truly show,  
Of mouthed graves will give thee memory ;  
Thou by thy dial's shady stealth mayst know  
Time's thievish progress to eternity.  
Look, what thy memory cannot contain,  
Commit to these waste blanks ; and thou shalt find  
Those children nursed, deliver'd from thy brain,  
To take a new acquaintance of thy mind.  
These offices, so oft as thou wilt look,  
Shall profit thee, and much enrich thy book.

## LXXXVIII.

So oft have I invoked thee for my Muse,  
And found such fair assistance in my verse.  
As every alien pen hath got my use,  
And under thee their poesy disperse.

---

<sup>1</sup> Steevens observes that this sonnet was probably designed to accompany a present of a book consisting of blank paper ; and Malone adds, that we learn from Sonnet cxxii. that Shakspeare received a table-book from his friend.

Thine eyes, that taught the dumb on high to sing,  
And heavy ignorance aloft to fly,  
Have added feathers to the learned's wing,  
And given grace a double majesty.  
Yet be most proud of that which I compile,  
Whose influence is thine, and born of thee :  
In others' works thou dost but mend the style,  
And arts with thy sweet graces graced be :  
But thou art all my art, and dost advance  
As high as learning my rude ignorance.

## LXXXIX.

Whilst I alone did call upon thy aid,  
My verse alone had all thy gentle grace ;  
But now my gracious numbers are decay'd,  
And my sick Muse doth give another place.  
I grant, sweet love, thy lovely argument  
Deserves the travail of a worthier pen ;  
Yet what of thee thy poet doth invent,  
He robs thee of, and pays it thee again.  
He lends thee virtue, and he stole that word  
From thy behavior ; beauty doth he give,  
And found it in thy cheek ; he can afford  
No praise to thee but what in thee doth live.  
Then thank him not for that which he doth  
say,  
Since what he owes thee thou thyself dost pay.

## LXXX.

O, how I faint when I of you do write,  
Knowing a better spirit<sup>1</sup> doth use your name,  
And in the praise thereof spends all his might,  
To make me tongue-tied, speaking of your fame!  
But since your worth, wide as the ocean is,  
The humble as the proudest sail doth bear,  
My saucy bark, inferior far to his,  
On your broad main doth wilfully appear.  
Your shallowest help will hold me up afloat,  
Whilst he upon your soundless deep doth ride;  
Or, being wreck'd, I am a worthless boat;  
He of tall building; and of goodly pride:  
Then if he thrive, and I be cast away,  
The worst was this;—my love was my decay.

## LXXXI.

Or I shall live your epitaph to make,  
Or you survive when I in earth am rotten;  
From hence your memory death cannot take,  
Although in me each part will be forgotten.  
Your name from hence immortal life shall have.  
Though I, once gone, to all the world must die.  
The earth can yield me but a common grave,  
When you entombed in men's eyes shall lie.

---

<sup>1</sup> Malone conjectures that Spenser is here meant.

Your monument shall be my gentle verse,  
 Which eyes not yet created shall o'er-read ;  
 And tongues to be, your being shall rehearse,  
 When all the breathers of this world are dead ;  
 You still shall live (such virtue hath my pen)  
 Where breath most breathes,—even in the mouths  
 of men.

## LXXXII.

I grant, thou wert not married to my Muse,  
 And therefore mayst without attaint o'erlook  
 The dedicated words which writers use  
 Of their fair subject, blessing every book.  
 Thou art as fair in knowlege as in hue,  
 Finding thy worth a limit past my praise ;  
 And therefore art enforced to seek anew  
 Some fresher stamp of the time-bettering days.  
 And do so, love ; yet when they have devised  
 What strained touches rhetoric can lend,  
 Thou truly fair wert truly sympathised  
 In true plain words, by thy true-telling friend ;  
 And their gross painting might be better used  
 Where cheeks need blood ; in thee it is abused.

## LXXXIII.

I never saw that you did painting need,  
 And therefore to your fair<sup>1</sup> no painting set.

---

<sup>1</sup> Beauty.

I found, or thought I found, you did exceed  
 The barren tender of a poet's debt :  
 And therefore have I slept in your report.  
 That you yourself, being extant, well might show  
 How far a modern<sup>1</sup> quill doth come too short,  
 Speaking of worth, what worth in you doth grow.  
 This silence for my sin you did impute,  
 Which shall be most my glory, being dumb ;  
 For I impair not beauty being mute,  
 When others would give life, and bring a tomb.  
 There lives more life in one of your fair eyes  
 Than both your poets can in praise devise.

## LXXXIV.

Who is it that says most ? which can say more,  
 Than this rich praise ;—that you alone are you ?  
 In whose confine immured is the store,  
 Which should example where your equal grew.  
 Lean penury within that pen doth dwell,  
 That to his subject lends not some small glory ;  
 But he that writes of you, if he can tell  
 That you are you, so dignifies his story,  
 Let him but copy what in you is writ,  
 Not making worse what nature made so clear,  
 And such a counterpart shall fame his wit,  
 Making his style admired every where.

---

<sup>1</sup> Common, trite

You to your beauteous blessings add a curse,  
Being fond on praise, which makes your praises  
worse.

## LXXXV.

My tongue-tied Muse in manners holds her still,  
While comments of your praise, richly compiled.  
Reserve<sup>1</sup> their character with golden quill,  
And precious phrase by all the Muses filed.  
I think good thoughts, while others write good  
words :

And, like unletter'd clerk, still cry Amen  
To every hymn that able spirit affords,  
In polish'd form of well-refined pen.  
Hearing you praised, I say,—‘ ‘Tis so,’ ‘ ‘Tis true,’  
And to the most of praise add something more ;  
But that it is in my thought, whose love to you,  
Though words come hindmost, holds his rank  
before.

Then others for the breath of words respect ;  
Me for my dumb thoughts, speaking in effect.

## LXXXVI.

Was it the proud full sail of his great verse,  
Bound for the prize of all-too-precious you,  
That did my ripe thoughts in my brain inhearse,  
Making their tomb the womb wherein they grew ?

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. preserve.

Was it his spirit, by spirits taught to write  
 Above a mortal pitch, that struck me dead ?  
 No, neither he, nor his compeers by night  
 Giving him aid, my verse astonished.  
 He, nor that affable familiar ghost,  
 Which nightly gulls him with intelligence,  
 As victors, of my silence cannot boast :  
 I was not sick of any fear from thence.  
 But when your countenance filed <sup>1</sup> up his line,  
 Then lack'd I matter ; that enfeebled mine.

## LXXXVII.

Farewell ! thou art too dear for my possessing,  
 And like enough thou know'st thy estimate :  
 'The charter of thy worth gives thee releasing ;  
 My bonds in thee are all determinate.<sup>2</sup>  
 For how do I hold thee but by thy granting ?  
 And for that riches where is my deserving ?  
 The cause of this fair gift in me is wanting,  
 And so my patent back again is swerving.  
 Thyself thou gavest, thy own worth then not  
 knowing,  
 Or me, to whom thou gavest it, else mistaking ;  
 So thy great gift, upon misprision growing,  
 Comes home again, on better judgment making.  
 Thus have I had thee, as a dream doth flatter ;  
 In sleep, a king ; but waking, no such matter.

<sup>1</sup> Polished.<sup>2</sup> Ended, out of date.

## LXXXVIII.

When thou shalt be disposed to set me light,  
And place my merit in the eye of scorn,  
Upon thy side against myself I'll fight,  
And prove thee virtuous, though thou art forsworn.  
With mine own weakness being best acquainted,  
Upon thy part I can set down a story  
Of faults conceal'd, wherein I am attainted ;  
That thou, in losing me, shalt win much glory :  
And I by this will be a gainer too ;  
For bending all my loving thoughts on thee,  
The injuries that to myself I do,  
Doing thee vantage, double-vantage me.  
Such is my love, to thee I so belong,  
That for thy right myself will bear all wrong.

## LXXXIX.

Say that thou didst forsake me for some fault,  
And I will comment upon that offence :  
Speak of my lameness, and I straight will halt ;  
Against thy reasons making no defence.  
Thou canst not, love, disgrace me half so ill,  
To set a form upon desired change,  
As I'll myself disgrace : knowing thy will,  
I will acquaintance strangle, and look strange :  
Be absent from thy walks ; and in my tongue  
Thy sweet-beloved name no more shall dwell ;  
Lest I, too much profane, should do it wrong,  
And haply of our old acquaintance tell.

For thee, against myself I 'll vow debate :  
 For I must ne'er love him whom thou dost  
 hate.

## xc.

Then hate me when thou wilt ; if ever, now ;  
 Now, while the world is bent my deeds to cross,  
 Join with the spite of fortune, make me bow,  
 And do not drop in for an after-loss :  
 Ah ! do not, when my heart hath scaped this  
 sorrow,  
 Come in the rearward of a conquer'd woe ;  
 Give not a windy night a rainy morrow,  
 To linger out a purposed overthrow.  
 If thou wilt leave me, do not leave me last,  
 When other petty griefs have done their spite ;  
 But in the onset come : so shall I taste  
 At first the very worst of fortune's might ;  
 And other strains of woe, which now seem  
 woe,  
 Compared with loss of thee, will not seem so.

## xci.

Some glory in their birth, some in their skill,  
 Some in their wealth, some in their body's force ;  
 Some in their garments, though new-fangled ill ;  
 Some in their hawks and hounds, some in their  
 horse ;  
 And every humor hath his adjunct pleasure,  
 Wherein it finds a joy above the rest :

But these particulars are not my measure ;  
All these I better in one general best.  
Thy love is better than high birth to me,  
Richer than wealth, prouder than garments' cost,  
Of more delight than hawks or horses be ;  
And having thee, of all men's pride I boast :  
Wretched in this alone, that thou mayst take  
All this away, and me most wretched make.

## XCII.

But do thy worst to steal thyself away,  
For term of life thou art assured mine ;  
And life no longer than thy love will stay,  
For it depends upon that love of thine.  
Then need I not to fear the worst of wrongs,  
When in the least of them my life hath end :  
I see a better state to me belongs  
Than that which on thy humor doth depend.  
Thou canst not vex me with inconstant mind,  
Since that my life on thy revolt doth lie.  
O, what a happy title do I find,  
Happy to have thy love, happy to die !  
But what's so blessed-fair that fears no blot ?—  
Thou mayst be false, and yet I know it not :

## XCIII.

So shall I live, supposing thou art true,  
Like a deceived husband ; so love's face

May still seem love to me, though alter'd-new;  
Thy looks with me, thy heart in other place:  
For there can live no hatred in thine eye,  
Therefore in that I cannot know thy change.  
In many's looks the false heart's history  
Is writ, in moods, and frowns, and wrinkles strange:  
But Heaven in thy creation did decree,  
That in thy face sweet love should ever dwell;  
Whate'er thy thoughts or thy heart's workings be,  
Thy looks should nothing thence but sweetness tell.  
How like Eve's apple doth thy beauty grow,  
If thy sweet virtue answer not thy show!

## xciv.

They that have power to hurt, and will do none;  
That do not do the thing they most do show;  
Who, moving others, are themselves as stone,  
Unmoved, cold, and to temptation slow;—  
They rightly do inherit Heaven's graces,  
And husband nature's riches from expense;  
They are the lords and owners of their faces,  
Others but stewards of their excellence.  
The summer's flower is to the summer sweet,  
Though to itself it only live and die;  
But if that flower with base infection meet,  
The basest weed outbraves his dignity:  
For sweetest things turn sourest by their deeds;  
Lilies that fester smell far worse than weeds.

## xcv.

How sweet and lovely dost thou make the shame.  
Which, like a canker in the fragrant rose.  
Doth stop the beauty of thy budding name !  
O, in what sweets dost thou thy sins enclose !  
That tongue, that tells the story of thy days,  
Making lascivious comments on thy sport,  
Cannot dispraise but in a kind of praise :  
Naming thy name blesses an ill report.  
O, what a mansion have those vices got,  
Which for their habitation chose out thee ;  
Where beauty's veil doth cover every blot ;  
And all things turn to fair, that eyes can see !  
Take heed, dear heart, of this large privilege :  
The hardest knife ill-used doth lose his edge.

## xcvi.

Some say, thy fault is youth, some wantonness ;  
Some say, thy grace is youth and gentle sport ;  
Both grace and faults are loved of more and less :  
Thou makest faults graces that to thee resort.  
As on the finger of a throned queen  
The basest jewel will be well esteem'd ;  
So are those errors that in thee are seen,  
To truths translated, and for true things deem'd.  
How many lambs might the stern wolf betray,  
If like a lamb he could his looks translate !  
How many gazers mightst thou lead away,  
If thou wouldst use the strength of all thy state !

But do not so : I love thee in such sort,  
As thou being mine, mine is thy good report.

## xcvii.

How like a winter hath my absence been  
From thee, the pleasure of the fleeting year !  
What freezings have I felt, what dark days seen !  
What old December's bareness every where !  
And yet this time removed <sup>1</sup> was summer's time ;  
The teeming autumn, big with rich increase,  
Bearing the wanton burden of the prime,  
Like widow'd wombs after their lords' decease :  
Yet this abundant issue seem'd to me  
But hope of orphans, and unfather'd fruit ;  
For summer and his pleasures wait on thee ;  
And, thou away, the very birds are mute ;  
Or, if they sing, 'tis with so dull a cheer,  
That leaves look pale, dreading the winter's near.

## xcviii.

From you have I been absent in the spring,  
When proud-pied April, dress'd in all his trim,  
Hath put a spirit of youth in every thing,  
That heavy Saturn laugh'd and leap'd with him.  
Yet nor the lays of birds, nor the sweet smell  
Of different flowers in odor and in hue,

---

i. e. this time in which I was remote or absent from thee.

Could make me any summer's story tell.  
Or from their proud lap pluck them where they  
grew:

Nor did I wonder at the lilies white,  
Nor praise the deep vermillion in the rose;  
They were but sweet, but figures of delight,  
Drawn after you; you pattern of all those.

Yet seem'd it winter still; and, you away,  
As with your shadow I with these did play:

## xcix.

The forward violet thus did I chide:—  
'Sweet thief, whence didst thou steal thy sweet that  
smells,  
If not from my love's breath? The purple pride,  
Which on thy soft cheek for complexion dwells,  
In my love's veins thou hast too grossly died.'  
The lily I condemned for thy hand,  
And buds of marjoram had stolen thy hair:  
The roses fearfully on thorns did stand,  
One blushing shame, another white despair:  
A third, nor red nor white, had stolen of both,  
And to his robbery had annex'd thy breath;  
But for his theft, in pride of all his growth,  
A vengeful canker eat him up to death.

More flowers I noted; yet I none could see,  
But sweet or color it had stolen from thee.

## C.

Where art thou, Muse, that thou forget'st so long  
To speak of that which gives thee all thy might ?  
Spend'st thou thy fury on some worthless song,  
Darkening thy power, to lend base subjects light ?  
Return, forgetful Muse, and straight redeem  
In gentle numbers time so idly spent ;  
Sing to the ear that doth thy lays esteem,  
And gives thy pen both skill and argument.  
Rise, restiff Muse ; my love's sweet face survey,  
If Time have any wrinkle graven there ;  
If any, be a satire to decay,  
And make Time's spoils despised every where.

Give my love fame faster than Time wastes life ;  
So thou prevent'st his scythe and crooked knife.

## CI.

O truant Muse, what shall be thy amends,  
For thy neglect of truth in beauty died ?  
Both truth and beauty on my love depends ;  
So dost thou too, and therein dignified.  
Make answer, Muse ; wilt thou not haply say ;—  
‘ Truth needs no color, with his color fix'd ;  
Beauty no pencil, beauty's truth to lay ;  
But best is best, if never intermix'd ? ’  
Because he needs no praise, wilt thou be dumb ?  
Excuse not silence so ; for it lies in thee  
To make him much outhive a gilded tomb,  
And to be praised of ages yet to be.

Then do thy office, Muse ; I teach thee how  
To make him seem long hence as he shows now

## CII.

My love is strengthen'd, though more weak in  
seeming ;

I love not less, though less the show appear ;  
That love is merchandised, whose rich esteeming  
The owner's tongue doth publish every where.  
Our love was new, and then but in the spring,  
When I was wont to greet it with my lays ;  
As Philomel in summer's front doth sing,  
And stops his pipe in growth of riper days :  
Not that the summer is less pleasant now  
Than when her mournful hymns did hush the night :  
But that wild music burdens every bough,  
And sweets grown common lose their dear delight :  
Therefore, like her, I sometime hold my tongue,  
Because I would not dull you with my song.

## CIII.

Alack ! what poverty my Muse brings forth ;  
That, having such a scope to show her pride,  
The argument, all bare, is of more worth,  
Than when it hath my added praise beside.  
O, blame me not, if I no more can write !  
Look in your glass, and there appears a face  
That overgoes my blunt invention quite,  
Dulling my lines, and doing me disgrace.

Were it not sinful then, striving to mend,  
 To mar the subject that before was well ?  
 For to no other pass my verses tend,  
 Than of your graces and your gifts to tell ;  
 And more, much more, than in my verse can sit,  
 Your own glass shows you, when you look in it.

## CIV.

To me, fair friend, you never can be old ;  
 For as you were, when first your eye I eyed,  
 Such seems your beauty still. Three winters cold  
 Have from the forests shook three summers' pride :  
 Three beauteous springs to yellow autumn turn'd,  
 In process of the seasons have I seen ;  
 Three April perfumes in three hot Junes burn'd,  
 Since first I saw you fresh, which yet are green.  
 Ah ! yet doth beauty, like a dial hand,  
 Steal from his figure, and no pace perceived ;  
 So your sweet hue, which methinks still doth  
 stand,  
 Hath motion, and mine eye may be deceived :  
 For fear of which, hear this, thou age unbred :—  
 Ere you were born, was beauty's summer dead.

## CV.

Let not my love be call'd idolatry,  
 Nor my beloved as an idol show,  
 Since all alike my songs and praises be.  
 To one, of one, still such, and ever so.

Kind is my love to-day, to-morrow kind,  
Still constant in a wondrous excellence ;  
Therefore my verse, to constancy confined,  
One thing expressing, leaves out difference.  
Fair, kind, and true, is all my argument ;  
Fair, kind, and true, varying to other words :  
And in this change is my invention spent ;  
Three themes in one, which wondrous scope affords.  
Fair, kind, and true have often lived alone ;  
Which three, till now, never kept seat in one.

## CVI.

When in the chronicle of wasted time  
I see descriptions of the fairest wights ;  
And beauty making beautiful old rhyme,  
In praise of ladies dead, and lovely knights ;—  
Then, in the blazon of sweet beauty's best,  
Of hand, of foot, of lip, of eye, of brow,  
I see their antique pen would have express'd  
Even such a beauty as you master now.  
So all their praises are but prophecies  
Of this our time, all you prefiguring ;  
And, for they look'd but with divining eyes,  
They had not skill enough your worth to sing :  
For we, which now behold these present days,  
Have eyes to wonder, but lack tongues to  
praise.

## CVII.

Not mine own fears, nor the prophetic soul  
 Of the wide world dreaming on things to come,  
 Can yet the lease of my true love control,  
 Supposed as forfeit to a confined doom.  
 The mortal moon hath her eclipse endured,  
 And the sad augurs mock their own presage ;  
 Incertainties now crown themselves assured,  
 And peace proclaims olives of endless age.  
 Now with the drops of this most balmy time  
 My love looks fresh, and death to me subscribes ;<sup>1</sup>  
 Since, spite of him, I 'll live in this poor rhyme,  
 While he insults o'er dull and speechless tribes :  
 And thou in this shalt find thy monument,  
 When tyrants' crests and tombs of brass are  
 spent.

## CVIII.

What 's in the brain that ink may character,  
 Which hath not figured to thee my true spirit ?  
 What 's new to speak, what new to register,  
 That may express my love, or thy dear merit ?  
 Nothing, sweet boy ; but yet, like prayers divine.  
 I must each day say o'er the very same ;  
 Counting no old thing old, thou mine, I thine,  
 Even as when first I hallow'd thy fair name.

---

<sup>1</sup> Obeys, submits.

So that eternal love, in love's fresh case,  
 Weighs not the dust and injury of age,  
 Nor gives to necessary wrinkles place ;  
 But makes antiquity for aye his page ;  
 Finding the first conceit of love there bred,  
 Where time and outward form would show it  
 dead.

## CIX.

O, never say that I was false of heart,  
 Though absence seem'd my flame to qualify !  
 As easy might I from myself depart,  
 As from my soul, which in thy breast doth lie.  
 That is my home of love : if I have ranged,  
 Like him that travels, I return again ;  
 Just to the time, not with the time exchanged ;  
 So that myself bring water for my stain.  
 Never believe, though in my nature reign'd  
 All frailties that besiege all kinds of blood,  
 That it could so preposterously be stain'd,  
 To leave for nothing all thy sum of good ;  
 For nothing this wide universe I call,  
 Save thou, my rose ; in it thou art my all.

## CX.

Alas, 'tis true, I have gone here and there,  
 And made myself a motley to the view ;<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. seemed like a fool ; whose dress used to be motley.

Gored mine own thoughts, sold cheap what is most dear,  
 Made old offences of affections new.  
 Most true it is, that I have look'd on truth  
 Askance and strangely; but, by all above,  
 These blenches<sup>1</sup> gave my heart another youth,  
 And worse essays proved thee my best of love.  
 Now all is done, save what shall have no end:  
 Mine appetite I never more will grind  
 On newer proof, to try an older friend,  
 A god in love, to whom I am confined.  
 Then give me welcome, next my heaven the best,  
 Even to thy pure and most most loving breast.

## CXI.

O, for my sake do you with fortune chide,  
 The guilty goddess of my harmful deeds,  
 That did not better for my life provide,  
 Than public means, which public manners breeds.<sup>2</sup>  
 Thence comes it that my name receives a brand,  
 And almost thence my nature is subdued  
 To what it works in, like the dier's hand:  
 Pity me then, and wish I were renew'd;  
 Whilst, like a willing patient, I will drink  
 Potions of eysell,<sup>3</sup> 'gainst my strong infection:

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. these starts or aberrations from rectitude.

<sup>2</sup> Our author seems here to lament his being reduced to the necessity of appearing on the stage, or writing for the theatre

<sup>3</sup> Vinegar.

No bitterness that I will bitter think,  
Nor double penance, to correct correction.  
Pity me then, dear friend ; and I assure ye,  
Even that your pity is enough to cure me.

## CXII.

Your love and pity doth the impression fill  
Which vulgar scandal stamp'd upon my brow ;  
For what care I who calls me well or ill,  
So you o'ergreen my bad, my good allow ?<sup>1</sup>  
You are my all-the-world, and I must strive  
To know my shames and praises from your tongue ;  
None else to me, nor I to none alive,  
That my steel'd sense or changes, right or wrong.<sup>2</sup>  
In so profound abyss I throw all care  
Of others' voices, that my adder's sense  
To critic and to flatterer stopped are.  
Mark how with my neglect I do dispense :—  
You are so strongly in my purpose bred,  
That all the world besides methinks they are  
dead.

---

<sup>1</sup> Approve.

<sup>2</sup> 'The meaning seems to be—you are the only person who has power to change my stubborn resolution, either to what is right or to what is wrong.'—Steevens.

## CXIII.

Since I left you, mine eye is in my mind ;  
 And that which governs me to go about,  
 Doth part his function, and is partly blind ;  
 Seems seeing, but effectually is out ;  
 For it no form delivers to the heart  
 Of bird, of flower, or shape, which it doth latch ;<sup>1</sup>  
 Of his quick objects hath the mind no part,  
 Nor his own vision holds what it doth catch :  
 For if it see the rudest or gentlest sight,  
 The most sweet favor,<sup>2</sup> or deformed'st creature,  
 The mountain or the sea, the day or night,  
 The crow or dove, it shapes them to your feature.  
 Incapable of more, replete with you,  
 My most true mind thus maketh mine untrue.<sup>3</sup>

## CXIV.

Or whether doth my mind, being crown'd with you,  
 Drink up the monarch's plague, this flattery ;  
 Or whether shall I say, mine eye saith true,  
 And that your love taught it this alchymy,  
 To make, of monsters and things indigest,  
 Such cherubins as your sweet self resemble ;

<sup>1</sup> Lay hold of.

<sup>2</sup> Countenance.

<sup>3</sup> The word untrue is here used as a substantive. The sincerity of my affection is the cause of my untruth ; i. e. of my not seeing objects truly, such as they appear to the rest of mankind. —Malone.

Creating every bad a perfect best,  
 As fast as objects to his beams assemble ?  
 O, 'tis the first ; 'tis flattery in my seeing,  
 And my great mind most kingly drinks it up :  
 Mine eye well knows what with his gust is 'greeing,  
 And to his palate doth prepare the cup :  
 If it be poison'd, 'tis the lesser sin,  
 That mine eye loves it, and doth first begin.

## cxv.

Those lines that I before have writ, do lie,  
 Even those that said I could not love you dearer ;  
 Yet then my judgment knew no reason why  
 My most full flame should afterwards burn clearer :  
 But reckoning time, whose million'd accidents  
 Creep in 'twixt vows, and change decrees of kings,  
 Tan sacred beauty, blunt the sharp'st intents,  
 Divert strong minds to the course of altering  
 things ;—

Alas ! why, fearing of time's tyranny,  
 Might I not then say,—‘ Now I love you best,’  
 When I was certain o'er incertainty,  
 Crowning the present, doubting of the rest ?

Love is a babe ; then might I not say so,  
 To give full growth to that which still doth  
 grow ?

## cxvi.

Let me not to the marriage of true minds  
 Admit impediments    Love is not love,

Which alters when it alteration finds,  
Or bends with the remover to remove :  
O, no ; it is an ever-fixed mark,  
That looks on tempests, and is never shaken ;  
It is the star to every wandering bark,  
Whose worth 's unknown, although his height be  
taken.

Love 's not Time's fool, though rosy lips and cheeks  
Within his bending sickle's compass come ,  
Love alters not with his brief hours and weeks,  
But bears it out even to the edge of doom.

If this be error, and upon me proved ;—  
I never writ, nor no man ever loved.

## CXVII.

Accuse me thus ; that I have scanted all,  
Wherein I should your great deserts repay ;  
Forgot upon your dearest love to call,  
Whereto all bonds do tie me day by day ;  
That I have frequent been with unknown minds,  
And given to time your own dear-purchased right ;  
That I have hoisted sail to all the winds,  
Which should transport me farthest from your  
sight.

Book both my wilfulness and errors down ;  
And, on just proof, surmise accumulate ;  
Bring me within the level of your frown,  
But shoot not at me in your waken'd hate :  
Since my appeal says, I did strive to prove  
The constancy and virtue of your love.

## CXVIII.

Like as, to make our appetites more keen,  
 With eager<sup>1</sup> compounds we our palate urge ;  
 As, to prevent our maladies unseen,  
 We sicken to shun sickness, when we purge ;—  
 Even so, being full of your ne'er-cloying sweetness,  
 To bitter sauces did I frame my feeding ;  
 And, sick of welfare, found a kind of meetness  
 To be diseased, ere that there was true needing.  
 Thus policy in love, to anticipate  
 The ills that were not, grew to faults assured,  
 And brought to medicine a healthful state,  
 Which, rank of goodness, would by ill be cured.  
 But thence I learn, and find the lesson true,  
 Drugs poison him that so fell sick of you.

## CXIX.

What potions have I drunk of siren tears,  
 Distill'd from limbecks foul as hell within ;  
 Applying fears to hopes, and hopes to fears ;  
 Still losing when I saw myself to win !  
 What wretched errors hath my heart committed,  
 Whilst it hath thought itself so blessed never !  
 How have mine eyes out of their spheres been  
 fitted,  
 In the distraction of this madding fever !<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Sour.

<sup>2</sup> How have mine eyes been convulsed during the frantic fits of my feverish love !

O benefit of ill ! now I find true,  
 That better is by evil still made better ;  
 And ruin'd love, when it is built anew,  
 Grows fairer than at first, more strong, far greater.  
 So I return rebuked to my content,  
 And gain by ill thrice more than I have spent.

## CXX.

That you were once unkind, befriends me now ;  
 And for that sorrow, which I then did feel,  
 Needs must I under my transgression bow,  
 Unless my nerves were brass or hammer'd steel :  
 For if you were by my unkindness shaken,  
 As I by yours, you have pass'd a hell of time ;  
 And I, a tyrant, have no leisure taken  
 To weigh how once I suffer'd in your crime.  
 O, that our night of woe might have remember'd<sup>1</sup>  
 My deepest sense, how hard true sorrow hits ;  
 And soon to you, as you to me, then tender'd  
 The humble salve which wounded bosoms fits !  
 But that your trespass now becomes a fee ;  
 Mine ransoms yours, and yours must ransom me.

## CXXI.

"Tis better to be vile, than vile esteem'd,  
 When not to be receives reproach of being ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Reminded.

And the just pleasure lost, which is so deem'd,  
 Not by our feeling, but by others' seeing.  
 For why should others' false, adulterate eyes  
 Give salutation to my sportive blood ?  
 Or on my frailties why are frailer spies,  
 Which in their wills count bad what I think good ?  
 No ; I am that I am ; and they that level  
 At my abuses, reckon up their own :  
 I may be straight, though they themselves be  
 bevel ;<sup>1</sup>  
 By their rank thoughts my deeds must not be  
 shown :  
 Unless this general evil they maintain ;—  
 All men are bad, and in their badness reign.

## CXXII.

Thy gift, thy tables, are within my brain  
 Full character'd with lasting memory,  
 Which shall above that idle rank remain,  
 Beyond all date, even to eternity :  
 Or, at the least, so long as brain and heart  
 Have faculty by nature to subsist ;  
 Till each to rased oblivion yield his part  
 Of thee, thy record never can be miss'd.  
 That poor retention could not so much hold,<sup>2</sup>  
 Nor need I tallies, thy dear love to score ;

<sup>1</sup> Crooked.

<sup>2</sup> ‘ ‘ That poor retention ’ is the table-book given to him by his friend, incapable of retaining, or rather of containing, so much as the tablet of the brain.’ —Malone.

Therefore to give them from me was I bold,  
 To trust those tables that receive thee more.  
 To keep an adjunct to remember thee,  
 Were to import forgetfulness in me.

## cxxxiii.

No ; Time, thou shalt not boast that I do change :  
 Thy pyramids, built up with newer might,  
 To me are nothing novel, nothing strange ;  
 They are but dressings of a former sight.  
 Our dates are brief, and therefore we admire  
 What thou dost foist upon us that is old ;  
 And rather make them born to our desire,  
 Than think that we before have heard them told.  
 Thy registers and thee I both defy,  
 Not wondering at the present nor the past ;  
 For thy records and what we see do lie,  
 Made more or less by thy continual haste :  
 This I do vow, and this shall ever be ;  
 I will be true, despite thy scythe and thee.

## cxxxiv.

If my dear love were but the child of state,  
 It might for fortune's bastard be unfather'd,  
 As subject to time's love or to time's hate,  
 Weeds among weeds, or flowers with flowers ga-  
 ther'd.  
 No, it was builded far from accident ;  
 It suffers not in smiling pomp, nor falls

Under the blow of thralled discontent,  
Whereto the inviting time our fashion calls :  
It fears not policy, that heretic,  
Which works on leases of short-number'd hours ;  
But all alone stands hugely politic,  
That it nor grows with heat, nor drowns with  
showers.

To this I witness call the fools of time,  
Which die for goodness, who have lived for  
crime.

## CXXV.

Were it aught to me I bore the canopy,  
With my extern the outward honoring,  
Or laid great bases for eternity,  
Which prove more short than waste or ruining ?  
Have I not seen dwellers on form and favor  
Lose all, and more, by paying too much rent ;  
For compound sweet foregoing simple savor ;  
Pitiful thrivers, in their gazing spent ?  
No ; let me be obsequious in thy heart,  
And take thou my oblation, poor but free,  
Which is not mix'd with seconds, knows no art,  
But mutual render, only me for thee.

Hence, thou suborn'd informer ! a true soul,  
When most impeach'd, stands least in thy con-  
trol.

## CXXVI.

O thou, my lovely boy, who in thy power  
 Dost hold Time's fickle glass, his sickle, hour;  
 Who hast by waning grown, and therein shov'st  
 Thy lovers withering, as thy sweet self grow'st!  
 If nature, sovereign mistress over wrack,  
 As thou goest onwards, still will pluck thee back,  
 She keeps thee to this purpose, that her skill  
 May time disgrace, and wretched minutes kill.  
 Yet fear her, O thou minion of her pleasure;  
 She may detain, but not still keep her treasure:  
 Her audit, though delay'd, answer'd must be;  
 And her quietus is to render thee.

## CXXVII.

In the old age black was not counted fair,  
 Or if it were, it bore not beauty's name;  
 But now is black beauty's successive heir,  
 And beauty slander'd with a bastard shame:  
 For since each hand hath put on nature's power,  
 Fairing the foul with art's false-borrow'd face,  
 Sweet beauty hath no name, no holy hour,  
 But is profaned, if not lives in disgrace.  
 Therefore my mistress' eyes are raven black,  
 Her eyes so suited; and they mourners seem  
 At such, who, not born fair, no beauty lack,  
 Slandering creation with a false esteem: <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'They seem to mourn, that those who are not born fair, are yet possessed of an artificial beauty, by which they pass for what they are not; and thus dishonor nature by their imperfect imitation and false pretensions.'—Malone.

Yet so they mourn, becoming of their woe,  
That every tongue says, beauty should look so.

## cxxxviii.

How oft, when thou, my music, music play'st  
Upon that blessed wood, whose motion sounds  
With thy sweet fingers, when thou gently sway'st  
The wiry concord that mine ear confounds,  
Do I envy those jacks,<sup>1</sup> that nimble leap  
To kiss the tender inward of thy hand ;  
Whilst my poor lips, which should that harvest  
reap,

At the wood's boldness by thee blushing stand !  
To be so tickled, they would change their state  
And situation with those dancing chips,  
O'er whom thy fingers walk with gentle gait,  
Making dead wood more bless'd than living lips.

Since saucy jacks so happy are in this,  
Give them thy fingers, me thy lips to kiss.

## cxxxix.

The expense of spirit in a waste of shame  
Is lust in action ; and till action, lust  
Is perjured, murderous, bloody, full of blame,  
Savage, extreme, rude, cruel, not to trust ;  
Enjoy'd no sooner, but despised straight ;  
Past reason hunted ; and no sooner had,

<sup>1</sup> A jack is part of a small kind of spinnet, called a virginal.

Past reason hated, as a swallow'd bait,  
On purpose laid to make the taker mad :  
Mad in pursuit, and in possession so ;  
Had, having ; and in quest to have, extreme ;  
A bliss in proof ; and, proved, a very woe ;  
Before, a joy proposed ; behind, a dream :  
All this the world well knows ; yet none knows  
well  
To shun the heaven that 'leads men to this  
hell.

## cxxx.

My mistress' eyes are nothing like the sun ;  
Coral is far more red than her lips' red :  
If snow be white, why then her breasts are dun ;  
If hairs be wires, black wires grow on her head.  
I have seen roses damask'd, red and white,  
But no such roses see I in her cheeks ;  
And in some perfumes is there more delight  
Than in the breath that from my mistress reeks.  
I love to hear her speak ; yet well I know  
That music hath a far more pleasing sound :  
I grant, I never saw a goddess go ;  
My mistress, when she walks, treads on the  
ground :  
And yet, by heaven, I think my love as rare  
As any she, belied with false compare.

## CXXXI.

Thou art as tyrannous, so as thou art,  
As those whose beauties proudly make them cruel;  
For well thou know'st, to my dear, doting heart,  
Thou art the fairest and most precious jewel.  
Yet, in good faith, some say, that thee behold,  
Thy face hath not the power to make love groan :  
To say they err, I dare not be so bold,  
Although I swear it to myself alone :  
And, to be sure that is not false I swear,  
A thousand groans, but thinking on thy face,  
One on another's neck, do witness bear  
Thy black is fairest in my judgment's place.  
In nothing art thou black, save in thy deeds ;  
And thence this slander, as I think, proceeds.

## CXXXII.

Thine eyes I love ; and they, as pitying me,  
Knowing thy heart, torment me with disdain ;  
Have put on black, and loving mourners be,  
Looking with pretty ruth upon my pain.  
And truly not the morning sun of heaven  
Better becomes the gray cheeks of the east,  
Nor that full star that ushers in the even,  
Doth half that glory to the sober west ;--  
As those two mourning eyes become thy face.  
O, let it then as well beseem thy heart  
To mourn for me, since mourning doth thee grace,  
And suit thy pity like in every part.

Then will I swear, beauty herself is black.  
And all they foul that thy complexion lack.

## cxxxiii.

Besrew that heart, that makes my heart to groan  
For that deep wound it gives my friend and me !  
Is 't not enough to torture me alone,  
But slave to slavery my sweet'st friend must be ?  
Me from myself thy cruel eye hath taken,  
And my next self thou harder hast engross'd :  
Of him, myself, and thee, I am forsaken ;  
A torment thrice threefold thus to be cross'd.  
Prison my heart in thy steel bosom's ward,  
But then my friend's heart let my poor heart  
    bail :  
Whoe'er keeps me, let my heart be his guard ;  
Thou canst not then use rigor in my jail :  
    And yet thou wilt ; for I, being pent in thee,  
    Perforce am thine, and all that is in me.

## cxxxiv.

So now I have confess'd that he is thine,  
And I myself am mortgaged to thy will ;  
Myself I'll forfeit, so that other mine  
Thou wilt restore, to be my comfort still :  
But thou wilt not, nor he will not be free ;  
For thou art covetous, and he is kind :  
He learn'd but, surety-like, to write for me,  
Under that bond that him as fast doth bind.

The statute<sup>1</sup> of thy beauty thou wilt take,  
 Thou usurer, that put'st forth all to use,  
 And sue a friend, came debtor for my sake;  
 So him I lose through my unkind abuse.  
 Him have I lost; thou hast both him and me:  
 He pays the whole, and yet am I not free.

## cxxxv.

Whoever hath her wish, thou hast thy will,  
 And will to boot, and will in overplus:  
 More than enough am I that vex thee still,  
 To thy sweet will making addition thus.  
 Wilt thou, whose will is large and spacious,  
 Not once vouchsafe to hide my will in thine?  
 Shall will in others seem right gracious,  
 And in my will no fair acceptance shine?  
 The sea, all water, yet receives rain still,  
 And in abundance addeth to his store;  
 So thou, being rich in will, add to thy will  
 One will of mine, to make thy large will more.  
 Let no unkind, no fair beseechers kill;  
 Think all but one, and me in that one Will.

## cxxxvi.

If thy soul check thee that I come so near,  
 Swear to thy blind soul that I was thy Will,

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Statute has here its legal signification; that of a security or obligation for money.'—Malone.

And will, thy soul knows, is admitted there :  
 Thus far for love, my love-suit, sweet, fulfil.  
 Will will fulfil the treasure of thy love,  
 Ay, fill it full with wills, and my will one.  
 In things of great receipt with ease we prove,  
 Among a number one is reckon'd none.  
 Then in the number let me pass untold,  
 Though in thy stores' account I one must be ;  
 For nothing hold me, so it please thee hold  
 That nothing me, a something sweet to thee :  
 Make but my name thy love, and love that still ;  
 And then thou lovest me ; for my name is Will.

## cxxxvii.

Thou blind fool, Love, what dost thou to mine eyes,  
 That they behold, and see not what they see ?  
 They know what beauty is, see where it lies ;  
 Yet what the best is, take the worst to be.  
 If eyes, corrupt by over-partial looks,  
 Be anchor'd in the bay where all men ride,  
 Why of eyes' falsehood hast thou forged hooks,  
 Whereto the judgment of my heart is tied ?  
 Why should my heart think that a several plot,<sup>1</sup>  
 Which my heart knows the wide world's common  
 place ?  
 Or mine eyes seeing this, say this is not,  
 To put fair truth upon so foul a face ?

---

<sup>1</sup> An enclosed field.

in things right true my heart and eyes have  
err'd,  
And to this false plague are they now transferr'd.

## CXXXVIII.

When my love swears that she is made of truth,  
I do believe her, though I know she lies ;  
That she might think me some untutor'd youth,  
Unlearned in the world's false subtilties.  
Thus vainly thinking that she thinks me young,  
Although she knows my days are past the best,  
Simply I credit her false-speaking tongue :  
On both sides thus is simple truth suppress'd.  
But wherefore says she not, she is unjust ?  
And wherefore say not I, that I am old ?  
O, love's best habit is in seeming trust,  
And age in love loves not to have years told :  
Therefore I lie with her, and she with me ;  
And in our faults by lies we flatter'd be.

## CXXXIX.

O, call not me to justify the wrong.  
That thy unkindness lays upon my heart :  
Wound me not with thine eye, but with thy  
tongue ;  
Use power with power, and slay me not by art.  
Tell me, thou lovest elsewhere ; but in my sight,  
Dear heart, forbear to glance thine eye aside.

What need'st thou wound with cunning, when thy  
might

Is more than my o'erpress'd defence can 'bide?  
Let me excuse thee: ah! my love well knows  
Her pretty looks have been mine enemies;  
And therefore from my face she turns my foes,  
That they elsewhere might dart their injuries.

Yet do not so ; but since I am near slain,  
Kill me outright with looks, and rid my pain.

CXL.

Be wise as thou art cruel ; do not press  
My tongue-tied patience with too much disdain ;  
Lest sorrow lend me words, and words express  
The manner of my pity-wanting pain.  
If I might teach thee wit, better it were,  
Though not to love, yet, love, to tell me so ;  
As testy sick men, when their deaths be near,  
No news but health from their physicians know :  
For, if I should despair, I should grow mad,  
And in my madness might speak ill of thee :  
Now this ill-wresting world is grown so bad,  
Mad slanderers by mad ears believed be.

That I may not be so, nor thou belied,

Bear thine eyes straight, though thy proud heart  
go wide.

## CXLI.

In faith, I do not love thee with mine eyes,  
For they in thee a thousand errors note ;  
But 'tis my heart that loves what they despise,  
Who in despite of view is pleased to dote :  
Nor are mine ears with thy tongue's tune delighted ;  
Nor tender feeling, to base touches prone,  
Nor taste, nor smell, desire to be invited  
To any sensual feast with thee alone :  
But my five wits, nor my five senses can  
Dissuade one foolish heart from serving thee,  
Who leaves unsway'd the likeness of a man,  
Thy proud heart's slave and vassal wretch to be :  
Only my plague thus far I count my gain,  
That she that makes me sin, awards me pain.

## CXLII.

Love is my sin, and thy dear virtue hate,  
Hate of my sin, grounded on sinful loving :  
O, but with mine compare thou thine own state,  
And thou shalt find it merits not reproving ;  
Or if it do, not from those lips of thine,  
That have profaned their scarlet ornaments,  
And seal'd false bonds of love as oft as mine ;  
Robb'd others' beds revenues of their rents.  
Be it lawful I love thee, as thou lovest those,  
Whom thine eyes woo as mine importune thee :

Root pity in thy heart; that when it grows,  
Thy pity may deserve to pitied be.

If thou dost seek to have what thou dost hide,  
By self-example mayst thou be denied!

## CXLIII.

Lo, as a careful housewife runs to catch  
One of her feather'd creatures broke away;  
Sets down her babe, and makes all swift despatch  
In pursuit of the thing she would have stay;  
Whilst her neglected child holds her in chase,  
Cries to catch her, whose busy care is bent  
To follow that which flies before her face,  
Not prizing her poor infant's discontent;—  
So run'st thou after that which flies from thee,  
Whilst I thy babe chase thee afar behind;  
But if thou catch thy hope, turn back to me,  
And play the mother's part; kiss me; be kind:  
So will I pray that thou mayst have thy Will,  
If thou turn back, and my loud crying still.

## CXLIV.

Two loves I have of comfort and despair,  
Which, like two spirits, do suggest<sup>1</sup> me still:  
The better angel is a man right fair;  
The worser spirit a woman, color'd ill.

---

<sup>1</sup> Tempt.

To win me soon to hell, my female evil  
Tempteth my better angel from my side,  
And would corrupt my saint to be a devil,  
Wooing his purity with her foul pride :  
And whether that my angel be turn'd fiend,  
Suspect I may, yet not directly tell ;  
But being both from me, both to each friend,  
I guess one angel in another's hell.

Yet this shall I ne'er know ; but live in doubt,  
Till my bad angel fire my good one out.

## CXLV.

Those lips that Love's own hand did make,  
Breathed forth the sound that said, ' I hate,'  
To me, that languish'd for her sake :  
But when she saw my woful state,  
Straight in her heart did mercy come,  
Chiding that tongue, that ever sweet  
Was used in giving gentle doom ;  
And taught it thus anew to greet :  
' I hate,' she alter'd with an end,  
That follow'd it as gentle day  
Doth follow night, who, like a fiend,  
From heaven to hell is flown away.  
' I hate,' from hate away she threw ;  
And saved my life, saying,—' Not you.'

## CXLVI.

Poor soul, the centre of my sinful earth,  
Fool'd by those rebel powers that thee array.  
Why dost thou pine within, and suffer dearth,  
Painting thy outward walls so costly gay ?  
Why so large cost, having so short a lease,  
Dost thou upon thy fading mansion spend ?  
Shall worms, inheritors of this excess,  
Eat up thy charge ? Is this thy body's end ?  
Then, soul, live thou upon thy servant's loss,  
And let that pine to aggravate thy store ;  
Buy terms divine in selling hours of dross ;  
Within be fed, without be rich no more :  
So shalt thou feed on death, that feeds on  
men ;  
And, death once dead, there's no more dying  
then.

## CXLVII.

My love is as a fever, longing still  
For that which longer nurseth the disease ;  
Feeding on that which doth preserve the ill  
The uncertain sickly appetite to please.  
My reason, the physician to my love.  
Angry that his prescriptions are not kept,  
Hath left me ; and I desperate now approve,  
Desire is death, which physic did except.

Past cure I am, now reason is past care,  
 And frantic-mad with evermore unrest :  
 My thoughts and my discourse as madmen's are,  
 At random from the truth vainly express'd ;  
 For I have sworn thee fair, and thought thee  
 bright,  
 Who art as black as hell, as dark as night.

## CXLVIII.

O me ! what eyes hath love put in my head,  
 Whioh have no correspondence with true sight !  
 Or, if they have, where is my judgment fled,  
 That censures<sup>1</sup> falsely what they see aright ?  
 If that be fair whereon my false eyes dote,  
 What means the world to say it is not so ?  
 If it be not, then love doth well denote  
 Love's eye is not so true as all men's : no,  
 How can it ? O, how can Love's eye be true,  
 That is so vex'd with watching and with tears ?  
 No marvel then though I mistake my view :  
 The sun itself sees not, till heaven clears.

O cunning Love ! with tears thou keep'st me  
 blind,  
 Lest eyes well-seeing thy foul faults should find.

---

<sup>1</sup> Estimates.

## CLIX.

Canst thou, O cruel ! say I love thee not,  
 When I, against myself, with thee partake ?  
 Do I not think on thee, when I forgot  
 Am of myself, all, tyrant, for thy sake ?  
 Who hateth thee that I do call my friend ?  
 On whom frown'st thou that I do fawn upon ?  
 Nay, if thou lower'st on me, do I not spend  
 Revenge upon myself with present moan ?  
 What merit do I in myself respect,  
 That is so proud thy service to despise,  
 When all my best doth worship thy defect,  
 Commanded by the motion of thine eyes ?  
 But, love, hate on ; for now I know thy mind :  
 Those that can see thou lovest, and I am blind.

## CL.

O, from what power hast thou this powerful might,  
 With insufficiency my heart to sway ;  
 To make me give the lie to my true sight,  
 And swear that brightness doth not grace the day ?  
 Whence hast thou this becoming of things ill,  
 That in the very refuse of thy deeds  
 There is such strength and warrantise of skill,  
 That, in my mind, thy worst all best exceeds ?

Who taught thee how to make me love thee more,  
The more I hear and see just cause of hate?  
O, though I love what others do abhor,  
With others thou shouldst not abhor my state:  
If thy unworthiness raised love in me,  
More worthy I to be beloved of thee.

## CLI.

Love is too young to know what conscience is;  
Yet who knows not, conscience is born of love?  
Then, gentle cheater, urge not my amiss,<sup>1</sup>  
Lest guilty of my faults thy sweet self prove:  
For, thou betraying me, I do betray  
My nobler part to my gross body's treason;  
My soul doth tell my body that he may  
Triumph in love; flesh stays no farther reason;  
But, rising at thy name, doth point out thee  
As his triumphant prize. Proud of this pride,  
He is contented thy poor drudge to be,  
To stand in thy affairs, fall by thy side.

No want of conscience hold it, that I call  
Her love, for whose dear love I rise and fall.

## CLII.

In loving thee thou know'st I am forsworn;  
But thou art twice forsworn, to me love swearing;

---

<sup>1</sup> Fault.

In act thy bed-vow broke, and new faith torn,  
In vowing new hate after new love bearing.  
But why of two oaths' breach do I accuse thee,  
When I break twenty? I am perjured most;  
For all my vows are oaths but to misuse thee,  
And all my honest faith in thee is lost:  
For I have sworn deep oaths of thy deep kindness,  
Oaths of thy love, thy truth, thy constancy;  
And, to enlighten thee, gave eyes to blindness,  
Or made them swear against the thing they see:  
For I have sworn thee fair; more perjured I,  
To swear, against the truth, so foul a lie!

## CLIII.

Cupid laid by his brand, and fell asleep:  
A maid of Dian's this advantage found,  
And his love-kindling fire did quickly steep  
In a cold valley-fountain of that ground;  
Which borrow'd from this holy fire of love  
A dateless, lively heat, still to endure;  
And grew a seething bath, which yet men prove  
Against strange maladies a sovereign cure.  
But at my-mistress' eye love's brand new-fired,  
The boy for trial needs would touch my breast:  
I sick withal, the help of bath desired,  
And thither hied, a sad, distemper'd guest,  
But found no cure; the bath for my help lies  
Where Cupid got new fire;—my mistress' eyes

## CLIV.

The little love-god, lying once asleep,  
Laid by his side his heart-inflaming brand,  
Whilst many nymphs, that vow'd chaste life to  
keep,  
Came tripping by; but in her maiden hand  
The fairest votary took up that fire,  
Which many legions of true hearts had warm'd;  
And so the general of hot desire  
Was sleeping, by a virgin hand disarm'd.  
This brand she quenched in a cool well by,  
Which from love's fire took heat perpetual,  
Growing a bath and healthful remedy  
For men diseased; but I, my mistress' thrall,  
Came there for cure, and this by that I prove;—  
Love's fire heats water, water cools not love.



A LOVER'S COMPLAINT.



## A LOVER'S COMPLAINT.

---

[This beautiful poem was first printed in 1609, with our author's name, at the end of the quarto edition of his Sonnets.]

---

From off a hill, whose concave womb reworded  
A plaintful story from a sistering vale,  
My spirits to attend this double voice accorded,  
And down I lay to list the sad-tuned tale :  
Ere long espied a fickle maid full pale,  
Tearing of papers, breaking rings atwain,  
Storming her world with sorrow's wind and rain.

Upon her head a platted hive of straw,  
Which fortified her visage from the sun,  
Whereon the thought might think sometime it saw  
The carcase of a beauty spent and done.  
Time had not scythed all that youth begun,  
Nor youth all quit; but, spite of heaven's fell rage,  
Some beauty peep'd through lattice of sear'd age.

Oft did she heave her napkin to her eyne,  
Which on it had conceited characters,<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Fanciful images.

Laundering<sup>1</sup> the silken figures in the brine  
 That season'd woe had pelleted<sup>2</sup> in tears,  
 And often reading what contents it bears ;  
 As often shrieking undistinguish'd woe,  
 In clamors of all size, both high and low.

Sometimes her levell'd eyes their carriage ride,<sup>3</sup>  
 As they did battery to the spheres intend ;  
 Sometime diverted their poor balls are tied  
 To the orb'd earth : sometimes they do extend  
 Their view right on ; anon their gazes lend  
 To every place at once, and no where fix'd,  
 The mind and sight distractedly commix'd.

Her hair, nor loose, nor tied in formal plat,  
 Proclaim'd in her a careless hand of pride ;  
 For some, untuck'd, descended her sheaved<sup>4</sup> hat,  
 Hanging her pale and pined cheek beside :  
 Some in her threaden fillet still did bide ;  
 And, true to bondage, would not break from thence,  
 Though slackly braided in loose negligence.

A thousand favors from a maund<sup>5</sup> she drew,  
 Of amber, crystal, and of bedded jet,  
 Which one by one she in a river threw,  
 Upon whose weeping margent she was set,  
 Like usury, applying wet to wet ;

<sup>1</sup> Moistening.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. formed into pellets or balls.

<sup>3</sup> In allusion to a piece of ordnance.

<sup>4</sup> Straw.

<sup>5</sup> Hand basket.

Or monarchs' hands, that let not bounty fall  
Where want cries some, but where excess begs all.

Of folded schedules had she many a one,  
Which she perused, sigh'd, tore, and gave the  
flood;

Crack'd many a ring of posied gold and bone,  
Bidding them find their sepulchres in mud;  
Found yet more letters sadly penn'd in blood,  
With sleided<sup>1</sup> silk feat<sup>2</sup> and affectedly  
Enswathed, and seal'd to curious secresy.

These often bathed she in her fluxive eyes,  
And often kiss'd, and often 'gan to tear:  
Cried,—' O false blood ! thou register of lies,  
What unapproved witness dost thou bear !  
Ink would have seem'd more black and damned  
here ! '

This said, in top of rage the lines she rents,  
Big discontent so breaking their contents.

A reverend man that grazed his cattle nigh,  
Sometime a blusterer, that the ruffle knew  
Of court, of city, and had let go by  
The swiftest hours, observed as they flew;  
Towards this afflicted fancy<sup>3</sup> fastly drew;  
And, privileged by age, desires to know,  
In brief, the grounds and motives of her woe.

<sup>1</sup> Raw, untwisted.

<sup>2</sup> i. e. curiously, nicely.

<sup>3</sup> i. e. this afflicted love-sick lady

So slides he down upon his grained bat,<sup>1</sup>  
 And comely-distant sits he by her side ;  
 When he again desires her, being sat,  
 Her grievance with his hearing to divide :  
 If that from him there may be aught applied,  
 Which may her suffering ecstasy<sup>2</sup> assuage,  
 'Tis promised, in the charity of age.

' Father,' she says, ' though in me you behold  
 The injury of many a blasting hour,  
 Let it not tell your judgment I am old ;  
 Not age, but sorrow, over me hath power :  
 I might as yet have been a spreading flower,  
 Fresh to myself, if I had self-applied  
 Love to myself, and to no love beside.

' But, woe is me ! too early I attended  
 A youthful suit (it was to gain my grace)  
 Of one by nature's outwards so commended,  
 That maidens' eyes stuck over all his face.  
 Love lack'd a dwelling, and made him her place ;  
 And when in his fair parts she did abide,  
 She was new lodged, and newly deified.

' His browny locks did hang in crooked curls .  
 And every light occasion of the wind  
 Upon his lips their silken parcels hurls :  
 What 's sweet to do, to do will aptly find.

Each eye that saw him did enchant the mind ;  
 For on his visage was in little drawn,  
 What largeness thinks in paradise was sown.<sup>1</sup>

' Small show of man was yet upon his chin ;  
 His phoenix down began but to appear,  
 Like unshorn velvet, on that termless skin,  
 Whose bare outrag'd the web it seem'd to wear :  
 Yet show'd his visage by that cost most dear ;  
 And nice affections wavering stood in doubt  
 If best 'twere as it was, or best without.

' His qualities were beauteous as his form,  
 For maiden-tongued he was, and thereof free ;  
 Yet, if men moved him, was he such a storm,  
 As oft 'twixt May and April is to see,  
 When winds breathe sweet, unruly though they be.  
 His rudeness so with his authorised youth  
 Did livery falseness in a pride of truth.

' Well could he ride, and often men would say,—  
 ' That horse his mettle from his rider takes :  
 Proud of subjection, noble by the sway,  
 What rounds, what bounds, what course, what stop  
 he makes !'  
 And controversy hence a question takes,  
 Whether the horse by him became his deed,  
 Or he his manage by the well-doing steed.

---

<sup>1</sup> Sown.

· But quickly on this side the verdict went ;  
His real habitude gave life and grace  
To appertainings and to ornament ;  
Accomplish'd in himself, not in his case :  
All aids, themselves made fairer by their place,  
Came for additions ; yet their purposed trim  
Pieced not his grace, but were all graced by  
him.

· So on the tip of his subduing tongue  
All kind of arguments and question deep,  
All replication prompt, and reason strong,  
For his advantage still did wake and sleep :  
To make the weeper laugh, the laugher weep,  
He had the dialect and different skill,  
Catching all passions in his craft of will ;

· That he did in the general bosom reign  
Of young, of old ; and sexes both enchanted,  
To dwell with him in thoughts, or to remain  
In personal duty, following where he haunted :  
Consents bewitch'd, ere he desire, have granted ;  
And dialogued for him what he would say,  
Ask'd their own wills, and made their wills obey.

· Many there were that did his picture get,  
To serve their eyes, and in it put their mind ;  
Like fools that in the imagination set  
The goodly objects which abroad they find  
Of lands and mansions, theirs in thought assign'd ;

And laboring in more pleasures to bestow them,  
Than the true gouty landlord, which doth owe<sup>1</sup>  
them :

‘ So many have, that never touch'd his hand,  
Sweetly supposed them mistress of his heart:  
My woful self, that did in freedom stand,  
And was my own fee-simple, not in part ;—  
What with his art in youth, and youth in art,  
Threw my affections in his charmed power ;  
Reserved the stalk, and gave him all my flower.

‘ Yet did I not, as some my equals did,  
Demand of him ; nor, being desired, yielded ;  
Finding myself in honor so forbid,  
With safest distance I mine honor shielded :  
Experience for me many bulwarks builded  
Of proofs new-bleeding, which remain'd the foil  
Of this false jewel, and his amorous spoil.

‘ But, ah ! who ever shunn'd by precedent  
The destined ill she must herself assay ;  
Or forced examples, 'gainst her own content,  
To put the by-pass'd perils in her way ?  
Counsel may stop awhile what will not stay ;  
For when we rage, advice is often seen,  
By blunting us, to make our wits more keen.

---

<sup>1</sup> Own ~~awans~~



‘ Nor gives it satisfaction to our blood,  
 That we must curb it upon others’ proof;  
 To be forbid the sweets that seem so good,  
 For fear of harms that preach in our behoof.  
 O appetite, from judgment stand aloof!  
 The one a palate hath that needs will taste,  
 Though reason weep, and cry,—‘ It is thy last.’

‘ For farther I could say,—‘ This man ’s untrue;  
 And knew the patterns of his foul beguiling;<sup>1</sup>  
 Heard where his plants in others’ orchards grew;  
 Saw how deceits were gilded in his smiling;  
 Knew vows were ever brokers to defiling;  
 Thought, characters, and words, merely but art,  
 And bastards of his foul adulterate heart:

‘ And long upon these terms I held my city,  
 Till thus he ’gan besiege me:—‘ Gentle maid,  
 Have of my suffering youth some feeling pity,  
 And be not of my holy vows afraid:  
 That’s to you sworn, to none was ever said;  
 For feasts of love I have been call’d unto;  
 Till now did ne’er invite, nor never vow.

‘ ‘ All my offences that abroad you see,  
 Are errors of the blood, none of the mind;  
 Love made them not; with acture<sup>2</sup> they may be,

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. the examples of his seduction.

<sup>2</sup> Action.

Where neither party is nor true nor kind:  
 They sought their shame that so their shame did  
     find;  
 And so much less of shame in me remains,  
 By how much of me their reproach contains.

“ Among the many that mine eyes have seen,  
 Not one whose flame my heart so much as warm'd,  
 Or my affection put to the smallest teen,<sup>1</sup>  
 Or any of my leisures ever charm'd:  
 Harm have I done to them, but ne'er was harm'd;  
 Kept hearts in liveries, but mine own was free,  
 And reign'd, commanding in his monarchy.

“ Look here, what tributes wounded fancies<sup>2</sup> sent  
     me,  
 Of paled pearls, and rubies red as blood;  
 Figuring that they their passions likewise lent me  
 Of grief and blushes, aptly understood  
 In bloodless white and the encrimson'd mood;  
 Effects of terror and dear modesty,  
 Encamp'd in hearts, but fighting outwardly.

“ And, lo! behold these talents of their hair,<sup>3</sup>  
 With twisted metal amorously impeach'd,<sup>4</sup>  
 I have received from many a several fair,

---

<sup>1</sup> Grief.

<sup>2</sup> Love-sick maidens.

<sup>3</sup> i. e. these lockets, consisting of hair platted and set in  
 gold.

<sup>4</sup> Interwoven.

(Their kind acceptance weepingly beseech'd)  
With the annexions of fair gems enrich'd;  
And deep-brain'd sonnets, that did amplify  
Each stone's dear nature, worth, and quality.

“ The diamond; why, 'twas beautiful and hard,  
Whereto his invised<sup>1</sup> properties did tend;  
The deep-green emerald, in whose fresh regard  
Weak sights their sickly radiance do amend;  
The heaven-hued sapphire and the opal blend  
With objects manifold: each several stone,  
With wit well blazon'd, smiled or made some moan.

“ Lo ! all these trophies of affections hot,  
Of pensived and subdued desires the tender,  
Nature hath charged me that I hoard them not,  
But yield them up where I myself must render,  
That is, to you, my origin and ender:  
For these, of force, must your oblations be;  
Since I their altar, you enpatron me.

“ O, then advance of yours that phraseless hand,  
Whose white weighs down the airy scale of praise;  
Take all these similes to your own command,  
Hallow'd with sighs that burning lungs did raise;  
What me your minister, for you obeys,  
Works under you; and to your audit comes  
Their distract parcels in combined sums.

---

<sup>1</sup> For invisible.

‘ Lo ! this device was sent me from a nun,  
Or sister sanctified, of holiest note ;  
Which late her noble suit in court did shun,<sup>1</sup>  
Whose rarest havings made the blossoms dote ;<sup>2</sup>  
For she was sought by spirits of richest coat,<sup>3</sup>  
But kept cold distance ; and did thence remove,  
To spend her living in eternal love.

‘ ‘ But, O, my sweet, what labor is 't to leave  
The thing we have not, mastering what not strives !  
Paling the place which did no form receive,<sup>4</sup>  
Playing patient sports in unconstrained gyves.  
She that her fame so to herself contrives,  
The scars of battle scapeth by the flight ;  
And makes her absence valiant, not her might.

‘ ‘ O, pardon me, in that my boast is true ;  
The accident which brought me to her eye,  
Upon the moment did her force subdue,  
And now she would the caged cloister fly :  
Religious love put out religion's eye.  
Not to be tempted, would she be immured ;  
And now, to tempt all, liberty procured.

---

<sup>1</sup> Who lately retired from the solicitation of her noble admirers.

<sup>2</sup> Whose accomplishments were so extraordinary, that the flower of the young nobility were passionately enamored of her.

<sup>3</sup> i. e. coat of arms.

<sup>4</sup> Securing within the pale of a cloister, that heart which had never received the impression of love.

“ How mighty then you are, O, hear me tell !  
 The broken bosoms that to me belong,  
 Have emptied all their fountains in my well,  
 And mine I pour your ocean all among :  
 I strong o'er them, and you o'er me being strong.  
 Must for your victory us all congest,<sup>1</sup>  
 As compound love to physic your cold breast.

“ My parts had power to charm a sacred sun,  
 Who, disciplined and dieted in grace,  
 Believed her eyes, when they to assail begun ;  
 All vows and consecrations giving place.  
 O most potential love ! vow, bond, nor space,  
 In thee hath neither sting, knot, nor confine ;  
 For thou art all, and all things else are thine.

“ When thou impressest, what are precepts worth  
 Of stale example ? When thou wilt inflame,  
 How coldly those impediments stand forth  
 Of wealth, of filial fear, law, kindred, fame !  
 Love's arms are peace, 'gainst rule, 'gainst sense,  
 'gainst shame ;  
 And sweetens,<sup>2</sup> in the suffering pangs it bears,  
 The aloes of all forces, shocks, and fears.

---

<sup>1</sup> Heap together.

<sup>2</sup> The meaning may be—The warfare that love carries on against rule, sense, and shame, produces to the parties engaged a peaceful enjoyment ; and sweetens, &c.—Malone.

“ Now all these hearts that do on mine depend,  
 Feeling it break, with bleeding groans they pine ;  
 And suppliant their sighs to you extend,  
 To leave the battery that you make 'gainst mine,  
 Lending soft audience to my sweet design ,  
 And credent soul to that strong-bonded oath,  
 That shall prefer and undertake my troth.”

‘ This said, his watery eyes he did dismount,  
 Whose sights till then were levell'd on my face :  
 Each cheek, a river running from a fount,  
 With brinish current downward flow'd apace.  
 O, how the channel to the stream gave grace !  
 Who, glazed with crystal, gate<sup>1</sup> the glowing roses  
 That flame through water which their hue encloses.

‘ O father, what a hell of witchcraft lies  
 In the small orb of one particular tear !  
 But with the inundation of the eyes,  
 What rocky heart to water will not wear ?  
 What breast so cold, that is not warmed here ?  
 O cleft effect ! cold modesty, hot wrath,  
 Both fire from hence and chill extinciture hath !

‘ For, lo ! his passion, but an art of craft,  
 Even there resolved my reason into tears :  
 There my white stole of chastity I daff'd ;<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Got.

<sup>2</sup> Put off.

Shook off my sober guards, and civil<sup>1</sup> fears ;  
 Appear to him, as he to me appears.  
 All melting, though our drops this difference  
 bore ;—  
 His poison'd me, and mine did him restore.

‘ In him a plenitude of subtle matter,  
 Applied to cautels,<sup>2</sup> all strange forms receives ;  
 Of burning blushes, or of weeping water,  
 Or swooning paleness ; and he takes and leaves,  
 In either’s aptness, as it best deceives,  
 To blush at speeches rank, to weep at woes,  
 Or to turn white, and swoon at tragic shows ;

‘ That not a heart, which in his level came,  
 Could scape the hail of his all-hurting aim,  
 Showing fair nature is both kind and tame ;  
 And, veil’d in them, did win whom he would maim.  
 Against the thing he sought he would exclaim :  
 When he most burn’d in heart-wish’d luxury,<sup>3</sup>  
 He preach’d pure maid, and praised cold chastity.

‘ Thus, merely with the garment of a Grace,  
 The naked and concealed fiend he cover’d,  
 That the unexperienced gave the tempter place,  
 Which, like a cherubin, above them hover’d.  
 Who, young and simple, would not be so lover’d ?

<sup>1</sup> Grave, decorous.

<sup>2</sup> Lewdness.

<sup>3</sup> Insidious purposes.

Ah me! I fell; and yet do question make  
What I should do again for such a sake.

• O, that infected moisture of his eye;  
O, that false fire which in his cheek so glow'd;  
O, that forced thunder from his heart did fly;  
O, that sad breath his spongy lungs bestow'd;  
O, all that borrow'd motion, seeming owed; —  
Would yet again betray the fore-betray'd,  
And new pervert a reconciled maid!'

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. that seemed real and his own.



**THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM.**



## THE PASSIONATE PILGRIM.

---

[The *Passionate Pilgrim* was first published by William Jaggard in small 8vo. in 1599, with our author's name, in which are inserted a sonnet and ode, which had appeared during the preceding year in a collection of poems written by Richard Barnefield. In the year 1612 the same publisher proceeded still farther; for he then added to the former miscellany a celebrated madrigal of Marlowe, beginning with the words, 'Come, live with me, and be my love,' together with several pieces written by Thomas Heywood, who loudly complained of Jaggard's fraud: notwithstanding which remonstrance, these productions still continued to be inserted in all subsequent editions of our author's poems till the time of Malone; nor was the fallacy detected till the year 1766, when it was pointed out by Dr. Farmer, in his very ingenious *Essay on the Learning of Shakspeare*. The order in which these little pieces stand in the old copy is not followed by Mr. Malone, who has classed all those which relate to Adonis together.]

---

### I.

SWEET Cytherea, sitting by a brook,  
With young Adonis, lovely, fresh, and green,  
Did court the lad with many a lovely look:—  
Such looks as none could look but beauty's queen.

She told him stories to delight his ear ;  
She show'd him favors to allure his eye ;  
To win his heart, she touch'd him here and there :  
Touches so soft still conquer chastity.  
But whether unripe years did want conceit,  
Or he refused to take her figured proffer :—  
The tender nibbler would not touch the bait,  
But smile and jest at every gentle offer :  
Then fell she on her back, fair queen, and  
toward :  
He rose, and ran away ; ah, fool, too froward !

## II.

Scarce had the sun dried up the dewy morn,  
And scarce the herd gone to the hedge for shade,  
When Cytherea, all in love forlorn,  
A longing tarriance for Adonis made,  
Under an osier growing by a brook :—  
A brook, where Adon used to cool his spleen.  
Hot was the day ; she hotter, that did look  
For his approach, that often there had been.  
Anon he comes, and throws his mantle by,  
And stood stark naked on the brook's green  
brim ;  
The sun look'd on the world with glorious eye,  
Yet not so wistly as this queen on him.  
He, spying her, bounced in, whereas he stood :  
‘ O Jove,’ quoth she, ‘ why was not I a flood ? ’

## III.

Fair was the morn, when the fair queen of love,<sup>1</sup>

Paler for sorrow than her milk-white dove,  
For Adon's sake, a youngster proud and wild :  
Her stand she takes upon a steep-up hill.

Anon Adonis comes with horn and hounds :  
She, silly queen, with more than love's good will.  
Forbad the boy he should not pass those grounds :  
‘ Once,’ quoth she, ‘ did I see a fair, sweet youth  
Here in these brakes deep-wounded with a boar,  
Deep in the thigh, a spectacle of ruth !

See in my thigh,’ quoth she, ‘ here was the sore.’

She showed hers : he saw more wounds ‘ than  
one ;

And blushing fled, and left her all alone.

## IV.

Venus, with young Adonis sitting by her,  
Under a myrtle shade, began to woo him :  
She told the youngling how god Mars did try her,  
And as he fell to her, so fell she to him.  
‘ Even thus,’ quoth she, ‘ the warlike god embraced  
me ! ’

And then she clipp'd Adonis in her arms :

---

<sup>1</sup> An intermediate line is here lost.

‘ Even thus,’ quoth she, ‘ the warlike god unlaced  
me ! ’

As if the boy should use like loving charms :

‘ Even thus,’ quoth she, ‘ he seised on my lips ! ’

And with her lips on his did act the seizure :

And as she fetched breath, away he skips,

And would not take her meaning nor her pleasure.

Ah ! that I had my lady at this bay,  
To kiss and clip me till I run away !

## v.

Crabbed age and youth

Cannot live together :

Youth is full of pleasance.

Age is full of care ;

Youth like summer morn,

Age like winter weather ;

Youth like summer brave,

Age like winter bare :

Youth is full of sport,

Age’s breath is short ;

Youth is nimble, age is lame :

Youth is hot and bold,

Age is weak and cold ;

Youth is wild, and age is tame.

Age, I do abhor thee ;

Youth, I do adore thee :

O, my love, my love is young !

Age, I do defy thee :  
O, sweet shepherd, hie thee ;  
For, methinks, thou stay'st too long !

## VI.

Sweet rose, fair flower, untimely pluck'd, soon  
faded ;  
Pluck'd in the bud, and faded in the spring !  
Bright orient pearl, alack ! too timely shaded !  
Fair creature, kill'd too soon by death's sharp  
sting !  
Like a green plum that hangs upon a tree.  
And falls, through wind, before the fall should be.

I weep for thee, and yet no cause I have ;  
For why ? thou left'st me nothing in thy will :  
And yet thou left'st me more than I did crave ;  
For why ? I craved nothing of thee still :  
O, yes, dear friend ! I pardon crave of thee :  
Thy discontent thou didst bequeathe to me.

## VII.

Fair is my love, but not so fair as fickle ;  
Mild as a dove, but neither true nor trusty ;  
Brighter than glass, and yet, as glass is, brittle ;  
Softer than wax, and yet, as iron, rusty :  
A lily pale, with damask die to grace her ;  
None fairer, nor none falser to deface her.

Her lips to mine how often hath she join'd,  
Between each kiss her oaths of true love swearing !

How many tales to please me hath she coin'd,  
Dreading my love, the loss thereof still fearing !

Yet, in the midst of all her pure protestings,  
Her faith, her oaths, her tears, and all were  
jestings.

She burn'd with love, as straw with fire flameth ;  
She burn'd out love, as soon as straw outburneth ;  
She framed the love, and yet she foil'd the framing ;  
She bade love last, and yet she fell a turning.

Was this a lover, or a lecher whether ?  
Bad in the best, though excellent in neither.

## VIII.

Did not the heavenly rhetoric of thine eye,<sup>1</sup>  
('Gainst whom the world cannot hold argument)  
Persuade my heart to this false perjury ? -  
Vows, for thee broke, deserve not punishment.  
A woman I forswore ; but, I will prove,  
Thou being a goddess, I forswore not thee :  
My vow was earthly, thou a heavenly love ;  
Thy grace being gain'd, cures all disgrace in me.  
My vow was breath, and breath a vapor is :  
Then thou, fair sun, which on my earth dost shine,  
Exhalest this vapor vow ; in thee it is :  
If broken then, it is no fault of mine :

---

<sup>1</sup> This Sonnet appears in Love's Labor's Lost, vol. iii.  
p. 273.

If by me broke, what fool is not so wise,  
To break an oath, to win a paradise?

## ix.

If love make me forsworn, how shall I swear to  
love?<sup>1</sup>

O, never faith could hold, if not to beauty vow'd!  
Though to myself forsworn, to thee I'll constant  
prove;

Those thoughts to me like oaks, to thee like osiers  
bow'd.

Study his bias leaves, and makes his book thine  
eyes,

Where all those pleasures live, that art can com-  
prehend.

If knowlege be the mark, to know thee shall  
suffice:

Well learned is that tongue, that well can thee  
commend;

All ignorant that soul, that sees thee without  
wonder;

(Which is to me some praise, that I thy parts  
admire)

Thine eye Jove's lightning seems, thy voice his  
dreadful thunder,

Which, not to anger bent, is music, and sweet fire.

---

<sup>1</sup> This Sonnet is found in Love's Labor's Lost, vol. iii.  
p. 267.

Celestial as thou art, O, do not love that wrong,  
 To sing the heavens' praise with such an earthly  
 tongue.

## x.

Beauty is but a vain and doubtful good ;  
 A shining gloss, that fadeth suddenly ;  
 A flower that dies, when first it 'gins to bud ;  
 A brittle glass, that 's broken presently :  
 A doubtful good, a gloss, a glass, a flower.  
 Lost, faded, broken, dead within an hour.

And as goods lost are sold or never found ;  
 As faded gloss no rubbing will refresh ;  
 As flowers dead lie wither'd on the ground ;  
 As broken glass no cement can redress ;—  
 So beauty, blemish'd once, for ever 's lost,  
 In spite of physic, painting, pain, and cost.

## xi.

Good night, good rest. Ah ! neither be my share :  
 She bade good night, that kept my rest away ;  
 And daff'd me<sup>1</sup> to a cabin hang'd with care,  
 To descant on the doubts of my decay.  
 ' Farewell,' quoth she, ' and come again to-  
 morrow :'  
 Fare well I could not, for I supp'd with sorrow.

---

<sup>1</sup> Put me off.

Yet at my parting sweetly did she smile ;  
 In scorn or friendship, nill I <sup>1</sup> construe whether :  
 'T may be, she joy'd to jest at my exile ;  
 'T may be, again to make me wander thither :  
 'Wander !'—a word for shadows like myself ;  
 As take the pain, but cannot pluck the peli.

## xii.

Lord, how mine eyes throw gazes to the east !  
 My heart doth charge the watch ; the morning rise  
 Doth cite each moving sense from idle rest.  
 Not daring trust the office of mine eyes,  
 While Philomela sits and sings, I sit and mark,  
 And wish her lays were tuned like the lark ;

For she doth welcome daylight with her ditty,  
 And drives away dark, dismal-dreaming night :  
 The night so pack'd, I post unto my pretty :  
 Heart hath his hope, and eyes their wished sight ;  
 Sorrow changed to solace, solace mix'd with  
 sorrow ;  
 For why ? she sigh'd, and bade me come to-  
 morrow.

Were I with her, the night would post too soon ;  
 But now are minutes added to the hours :  
 To spite me now, each minute seems a moon ;  
 Yet not for me, shine sun to succour flowers !

---

<sup>1</sup> I will not.

Pack night, peep day; good day, of night now  
borrow;  
Short, night, to-night, and length thyself to-  
morrow.

## XIII.

It was a lording's daughter, the fairest one of  
three,

That liked of her master as well as well might be;  
Till looking on an Englishman, the fairest eye could  
see,

Her fancy fell a turning.

Long was the combat doubtful, that love with love  
did fight,

To leave the master loveless, or kill the gallant  
knight:

To put in practice either, alas! it was a spite  
Unto the silly damsel.

But one must be refused, more mickle was the pain,  
That nothing could be used, to turn them both to  
gain;

For of the two the trusty knight was wounded with  
disdain:

Alas! she could not help it.

Thus art with arms contending was victor of the  
day,

Which by a gift of learning did bear the maid  
away:

Then lullaby; the learned man hath got the lady  
gay;

For now my song is ended.

## xiv.

On a day, (alack the day !)<sup>1</sup>  
 Love, whose month was ever May,  
 Spied a blossom, passing fair,  
 Playing in the wanton air :  
 Through the velvet leaves the wind,  
 All unseen, 'gan passage find ;  
 That the lover, sick to death,  
 Wish'd himself the heaven's breath.  
 ' Air,' quoth he, ' thy cheeks may blow ;  
 Air, would I might triumph so !  
 But, alas ! my hand hath sworn  
 Ne'er to pluck thee from thy thorn :  
 Vow, alack, for youth unmeet ;  
 Youth, so apt to pluck a sweet.  
 Do not call it sin in me,  
 That I am forsworn for thee :  
 Thou, for whom Jove would swear  
 Juno but an Ethiop were ;  
 And deny himself for Jove,  
 Turning mortal for thy love.'

## xv.

My flocks feed not,  
 My ewes breed not.

<sup>1</sup> This Sonnet occurs also in *Love's Labor's Lost*, vol. iii.  
 p. 275.

My rams speed not ;

All is amiss :

Love's denying,

Faith's defying,

Heart's renying,<sup>1</sup>

Causer of this.

All my merry jigs are quite forgot ;

All my lady's love is lost, God wot :

Where her faith was firmly fix'd in love,

There a nay is placed without remove.

One silly cross

Wrought all my loss :

O frowning Fortune, cursed, fickle dame !

For now I see,

Inconstancy

More in women than in men remain.

In black mourn I ;

All fears scorn I ;

Love hath forlorn me,

Living in thrall :

Heart is bleeding,

All help needing,

(O cruel speeding !)

Fraughted with gall.

My shepherd's pipe can sound no deal : \*

My wether's bell rings doleful knell ;

---

<sup>1</sup> Renouncing : from the French word *renier*.

\* In no degree.

My curtail dog, that wont to have play'd,  
Plays not at all, but seems afraid :  
My sighs so deep,  
Procure<sup>1</sup> to weep,  
    In howling-wise, to see my doleful plight.  
How sighs resound  
Through harkless ground,  
    Like a thousand vanquish'd men in bloody fight !

Clear wells spring not ;  
Sweet birds sing not ;  
Loud bells ring not  
    Cheerfully :  
Herds stand weeping,  
Flocks all sleeping,  
Nymphs back creeping  
    Fearfully.

All our pleasure known to us poor swains,  
All our merry meetings on the plains,  
All our evening sport from us is fled ;  
All our love is lost, for love is dead.

Farewell, sweet lass ;  
Thy like ne'er was  
    For a sweet content, the cause of all my  
        moan :

Poor Coridon  
Must live alone :

Other help for him I see that there is none.

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Him,' or 'the dog.' must here be understood.

## XVI.

Whenas thine eye hath chose the dame,  
 And stall'd the deer that thou wouldest strike.  
 Let reason rule things worthy blame,  
 As well as fancy,<sup>1</sup> partial tike.

Take counsel of some wiser head,  
 Neither too young, nor yet unwed :

And when thou comest thy tale to tell,  
 Smoothe not thy tongue with filed talk,  
 Lest she some subtle practice smell ;  
 (A cripple soon can find a halt)

But plainly say thou lovest her well,  
 And set thy person forth to sell :

And to her will frame all thy ways ;  
 Spare not to spend, and chiefly there,  
 Where thy desert may merit praise,  
 By ringing always in her ear.

The strongest castle, tower, and town,—  
 The golden bullet beats it down.

Serve always with assured trust ;  
 And in thy suit be humble, true :  
 Unless thy lady prove unjust,  
 Press never thou to choose anew.

When time shall serve, be thou not slack  
To proffer, though she put thee oack.

What though her frowning brows be bent,  
Her cloudy looks will clear ere night;  
And then too late she will repent,  
That she dissembled her delight;  
And twice desire, ere it be day,  
That with such scorn she put away.

What though she strive to try her strength,  
And ban, and brawl, and say thee nay ;—  
Her feeble force will yield at length,  
When craft hath taught her thus to say :—  
‘ Had women been so strong as men.  
In faith, you had not had it then.’

The wiles and guiles that women work,  
Dissembled with an outward show,  
The tricks and toys that in them lurk,  
The cock that treads them shall not know.

Have you not heard it said full oft,  
A woman’s nay doth stand for naught?

Think, women love to match with men,  
And not to live so like a saint :  
Here is no heaven ; they holy then  
Begin, when age doth them attaint.

Were kisses all the joys in bed,  
One woman would another wed.

But, soft ! enough ! too much I fear :  
 For if my lady hear my song,  
 She will not stick to ring mine ear,  
 To teach my tongue to be so long :  
 Yet will she blush, here be it said.  
 To hear her secrets so bewray'd.

## XVII.

Take, O, take those lips away,<sup>1</sup>  
 That so sweetly were forsworn ;  
 And those eyes, the break of day ;—  
 Lights that do mislead the morn :  
 But my kisses bring again ;—  
 Seals of love, but seal'd in vain.

Hide, O, hide those hills of snow,  
 Which thy frozen bosom bears,  
 On whose tops the pinks that grow  
 Are of those that April wears :  
 But first set my poor heart free,  
 Bound in those icy chains by thee.

## XVIII.

Let the bird of loudest lay,  
 On the sole Arabian tree,

---

<sup>1</sup> The first stanza of this Sonnet will be found in *Measure for Measure*, vol. ii. p. 204.

Herald sad and trumpet be,  
To whose sound chaste wings obey :

But, thou shrieking harbinger,  
Foul precursor of the fiend,  
Augur of the fever's end,  
To this troop come thou not near.

From this session interdict  
Every fowl of tyrant wing,  
Save the eagle, feather'd king :  
Keep the obsequy so strict.

Let the priest in surplice white,  
That defunctive music can,<sup>1</sup>  
Be the death-divining swan,  
Lest the requiem lack his right :

And thou, treble-dated crow,  
That thy sable gender makest  
With the breath thou givest and takest :—  
'Mongst our mourners shalt thou go.

Here the anthem doth commence :—  
Love and constancy is dead ;  
Phœnix and the turtle fled  
In a mutual flame from hence.

---

<sup>1</sup> i. e. who understands funereal music.

So they loved, as love in twain  
Had the essence but in one;  
Two distincts, division none:  
Number there in love was slain.

Hearts remote, yet not asunder;  
Distance, and no space was seen  
'Twixt the turtle and his queen:  
But in them it were a wonder.

So between them love did shine,  
That the turtle saw his right  
Flaming in the phoenix' sight:  
Either was the other's raine.

Property was thus appall'd,  
That the self was not the same:  
Single nature's double name  
Neither two nor one was call'd.

Reason, in itself confounded,  
Saw division grow together;  
To themselves yet either neither,  
Simple were so well compounded;

That it cried,—How true a twain  
Seemeth this concordant one!  
Love hath reason, reason none,  
If what parts can so remain.

Whereupon it made this threne<sup>1</sup>  
To the phoenix and the dove,  
Co-supremes and stars of love ;  
As chorus to their tragic scene :—

THRENOS.

Beauty, truth, and rarity,  
Grace in all simplicity,  
Here enclosed in cinders lie.

Death is now the phoenix' nest ;  
And the turtle's loyal breast  
To eternity doth rest,

Leaving no posterity :  
'Twas not their infirmity ;  
It was married chastity.

Truth may seem, but cannot be ;  
Beauty brag, but 'tis not she :  
Truth and beauty buried be.

To this urn let those repair,  
That are either true or fair :  
For these dead birds sigh a prayer.

WM. SHAKE-SPEARE.

---

<sup>1</sup> Funeral song.



## I N D E X

TO

THE MOST STRIKING PASSAGES AND BEAUTIES OF  
SHAKSPEARE.



## I N D E X.

---

The volume is denoted by numerals, the page and line by figures.

---

Ability, innate, vol. ix. page 178, line 4 to 12  
Absence, lovers', i. 188, 19 to 22  
Achilles described by Ulysses, x. 32, 3 to p. 33, l. 18  
——— surveying Hector, x. 120, 9 to 13  
Action, power of, i. 182, 23 to p. 183, l. 4  
——— to be carried on with resolution, ix. 189, 20 to p. 190,  
l. 12  
Adoption, v. 25, 15 to 17  
Adoration, a lover's, v. 336, 12 to 23  
Adversity, its uses, iv. 260, 22 to p. 261, l. 19. vii. 151, 9 to  
17. *ib.* 362, 13 to 18  
———, the trial of man, x. 27, 6 to 19  
———, folly of repining at, x. 240, 15 to 25  
——— contrasted with past enjoyments, x. 242, 6 to 14  
Advice to a son going on his travels, v. 9, 28 to p. 10, l. 7.  
xiv. 31, 2 to 23  
——— to a statesman, ix. 264, 7 to 17  
——— to Ophelia by her brother, xiv. 28, 21 to p. 30, l. 10  
Affection in words, iii. 80, 4 to 9  
Affection, natural, allied to love, iv. 8, 23 to p. 9, l. 4  
———, tender, v. 346, 15 to 22  
Age, old, ii. 331, 23 to p. 332, l. 11. vii. 161, 4 to 12. xiv. 52,  
8 to 12  
———, despised, vi. 100, 7 to 13  
———, suspicious, xiv. 52, 8 to 12  
Ages, the seven, description of, iv. 281, 9 to p. 282, l. 14

**Allegiance**, firm, described, vol. vi. page 19, line 21 to page 20, line 2. vol. ix. page 253, line 17 to 23  
**Alloy**, universal, in this probationary life, xv. 102, 17 to 20  
**Amazement**, v. 377, 24 to p. 378, l. 5  
**Ambition** clothed in specious humility, xi. 308, 18 to 24  
 —— jealous of a too-successful friend, xii. 68, 19 to p. 69, l. 1  
**Ambitious love**, v. 10, 24 to p. 11, l. 13  
**Anarchy**, the mischiefs of, xi. 194, 16 to 20  
**Anger** described, ix. 181, 19 to 22  
 ——, external effects of, ix. 254, 6 to 10  
**Angling**, illustration from, iv. 165, 22 to 25  
**Antony**, his address to the corpse of Cæsar, and speech to the conspirators, xi. 337, 6 to 21  
 ——, his purposes of revenge, xi. 341, 13 to p. 342, l. 6  
 ——, funeral oration of, xi. 346, 12 to p. 352, l. 8  
 ——, his character of Brutus, xi. 390, 8 to 15  
 ——, his effeminacy, xii. 7, 11 to 15  
 ——, his vices and virtues, xii. 24, 22 to p. 27, l. 15  
 ——, his speech to Cleopatra on his return with victory, xii. 118, 10 to 13.  
 ——, his despondency, xii. 123, 7 to 13  
 ——, his reflections on his faded glory, xii. 125, 16 to p. 126, l. 17  
**Apemantus**, the cynic, grace of, x. 180, 5 to 14  
**Aposiopesis**, a fine one, i. 36, 17 to 23  
**Appearances**, false, described, vii. 318, 8 to 22  
**Applause**, description of, ix. 269, 15 to 25  
**Ariel**, songs of, i. 22, 4 to 16. *ib.* 22, 27 to p. 23, l. 5. *ib.* 83, 15 to 21  
**Army**, routed, description of one, xii. 283, 24 to p. 284, l. 10  
**Arrest**, ii. 142, 5 to 8  
**Arrogance**, reproof of, x. 60, 3 to p. 61, l. 3  
**Arthur's** pathetic appeal to Hubert to save his life, vi. 182, 14 to p. 187, l. 23  
**Artifice**, female, iv. 190, 8 to 17  
**Assignation**, iii. 128, 1 to 11  
**Astrology** ridiculed, xiii. 28, 7 to 22  
**Astronomers**, iii. 220, 15 to 20  
**Attachment**, vii. 37, 11 to 16  
**Aufidius's** hatred to Coriolanus, xi. 157, 10 to 18

Authority, abuse of, vol. ii. page 141, line 19 to 22. *ib.* page 167, line 15 to page 168, line 6  
—, privilege of, ii. 168, 11 to 15

Banter, power of, iii. 305, 8 to 13

Bargains, punctuality in, vii. 73, 24 to 27

Bastardy, xiii. 23, 9 to 23

Beatrice's recantation of a single life, iv. 169, 5 to 14

Beau, iii. 508, 7 to 13

Beauty, petitioning in vain, i. 154, 27 to p. 155, l. 9  
—, virtuous, the power of, ii. 170, 2 to p. 171, l. 1  
—, influence of, iii. 237, 6 to 9. iv. 259, 13. xv. 211, 12 to 25  
—, a scornful and satirical one, iv. 166, 24 to p. 167, l. 18  
—, description of, xiii. 195, 22 to p. 196, l. 2  
—, evanescent, xv. 270, 4 to 9

Bedlam beggars, xiii. 63, 6 to 13

Bees, the commonwealth of, described, vii. 300, 18 to p. 301, l. 7

Benedick's determination to lead a single life, iv. 130, 3  
p. 131, l. 7  
— recantation, iv. 162, 24 to p. 163, l. 23

Birth, high, ix. 36, 12 to 14

Boaster, vi. 137, 7. 8

Bolingbroke's public entry into London described, vi. 332  
15 to p. 333, l. 21

Boy, description of a beautiful, iv. 19, 4 to 9

Braggart, a cowardly one, v. 104, 24 to p. 105, l. 3  
—, reproof of, xii. 260, 9 to 12

Braggarts, talking, iv. 208, 16 to 23

Bribery, honest, ii. 169, 3 to 13

Bride, an amiable, iii. 65, 21 to p. 66, l. 8

Brutus and Cassius, tent scene between, xi. 360, 21 to p. 368, l. 4  
—, the parting of, xi. 378, 27 to p. 380, l. 4

Buckingham, duke of, his dying prayer for King Henry VIII. ix. 210, 7 to 11

Cæsar, his dislike of Cassius, xi. 296, 12 to 26

Caliban, curses of, i. 19, 13 to p. 20, l. 14. *ib.* 42, 23 to p. 43, l. 15

Caliban, his promises, vol. i. page 48, line 23 to page 49, line 12

Calumny, ii. 200, 10 to 14. xiv. 83, 1. 2

Cassius, his contempt of Cæsar, xi. 292, 17 to p. 294, l. 23

Caution recommended, ix. 182, 4 to 10

Ceremony insincere, xi. 359, 6 to 14

Chastity, v. 90, 18 to 22. xi. 261, 6 to 9

Cheats, ii. 269, 14 to 19

Cheerfulness, iii. 10, 16 to 23

Christmas-time, reverence paid to, xiv. 16, 19 to 25

Churchman, misemployed, vii. 220, 16 to 27. *ib.* 229, 3 to 6  
\_\_\_\_\_, description of one, ix. 293, 13 to 16

Churlishness, iv. 271, 10 to 12

Clarence's dream in the Tower, ix. 40, 11 to p. 42, l. 28

Cleopatra, her parting wish for Antony, xii. 23, 26 to p. 24,  
l. 2  
\_\_\_\_\_, her solicitude during the absence of Antony, xii.  
29, 6 to 22  
\_\_\_\_\_, her sailing down the Cydnus described, xii. 43,  
13 to p. 44, l. 14  
\_\_\_\_\_, her infinite power of pleasing, xii. 45, 7 to 12  
\_\_\_\_\_, description of her supposed death, xii. 126, 25 to  
p. 127, l. 6  
\_\_\_\_\_, her reflections on the death of Antony, xii. 136,  
9 to 24  
\_\_\_\_\_, her dream, and description of Antony, xii. 144,  
28 to p. 145, l. 17  
\_\_\_\_\_, her discourse with her attendants on applying the  
asp, xii. 155, 2 to p. 156, l. 21

Cominius, his praise of Coriolanus in the senate, xi. 173, 10  
to p. 174, l. 25

Commanding beauty, iii. 280, 10 to 17

Commendation, a lover's, xii. 9, 21 to 24

Company, contagion of evil, vii. 62, 1<sup>st</sup> to 16

Compassion and clemency superior to revenge, i. 80, 16 to 25

Complexion, black, apology for, iii. 26, 26 to p. 27, l. 11

Conduct in war under-rated by presumptuous courage, x. 33,  
31 to p. 34, l. 13

Confidence, xi. 321, 13 to 16

Conscience, guilty, i. 66 6 to 10  
\_\_\_\_\_, struggles of, i. 191, 9 to 9

Conscience, a good one described, vol. viii. page 211, line 7 to 16  
\_\_\_\_\_, death-bed horrors of a guilty, viii. 219, 12 to 22  
\_\_\_\_\_, a murderer's account of, ix. 45, 4 to 15  
\_\_\_\_\_, contempt of, ix. 161, 25. 26  
Consciousness of our own faults should incline us to mercy, ii. 168, 17 to 25  
Consideration, vii. 290, 17 to 20  
Consolation under banishment, vi. 257, 23 to p. 258, l. 14  
Conspiracy, dreadful till executed, xi. 310, 13 to 19  
\_\_\_\_\_, Brutus's apostrophe to, xi. 311, 8 to 16  
Conspirator, circumlocution of, vi. 172, 25 to p. 173, l. 21  
Contemplation, zealous, described, ix. 99, 24 to p. 100, l. 3  
Content, viii. 339, 23 to p. 340, l. 3. xiv. 234, 6 to 15  
Contention, vii. 146, 2 to 4  
Continence, i. 67, 20 to p. 68, l. 3  
Contrast between a melancholy and cheerful man, iii. 7, 6 to p. 9, l. 16  
Conversation, iii. 287, 9 to 13. vi. 282, 1 to 4  
Conversion, iv. 329, 7 to 9  
Cordelia's grief at the ingratitude of her sisters, xiii. 135, 20 to p. 136, l. 10  
Coriolanus, an imaginative description of his warlike ardor, xi. 137, 11 to 25  
\_\_\_\_\_, his character, xi. 143, 22 to p. 144, l. 3. *ib.* 201, 19 to 24  
\_\_\_\_\_, his abhorrence of flattery, xi. 210, 23 to p. 211, l. 13  
\_\_\_\_\_, his detestation of the vulgar, xi. 218, 18 to p. 219, l. 8  
\_\_\_\_\_, his prayer for his son, xi. 261, 13 to 18  
Correction suspended, vii. 226, 22 to p. 227, l. 8  
Covetousness, xv. 72, 8 to 14  
Counsel of no weight in misery, iv. 204, 23 to p. 205, l. 25  
Countenance, guilty, viii. 203, 18. 19  
\_\_\_\_\_, benign, xi. 9, 21 to p. 10, l. 1  
Country, an oppressed one, vi. 90, 5 to 14  
Courage, vi. 134, 16 to 18  
Court beauty, ii. 68, 16 to 20  
Courtier, a conceited one, iii. 223, 19 to p. 224, l. 4  
\_\_\_\_\_, character of a noble, v. 17, 24 to p. 19, l. 13

Courtier, humorous assumption of, vol. v. page 322, line 9 to 18  
 \_\_\_\_\_, description of a finical, vii. 21, 18 to p. 22, l. 24  
 Courtship, honest, v. 336, 24 to p. 337, l. 7  
 Coward, v. 11, 16 to 21  
 Cowardice and perjury, vi. 160, 24 to p. 161, l. 15  
 \_\_\_\_\_ reproved, xi. 142, 12 to 23  
 Cowardly braggart, iv. 13, 8 to 11  
 Coxcombs, xiv. 168, 9 to 15  
 Cranmer, his prophecy respecting Queen Elizabeth, ix. 304, 13 to p. 305, l. 25  
 Cressida, description of, x. 112, 9 to 17  
 Crown, reflections on a, vii. 246, 8 to 16  
 \_\_\_\_\_, the transports of a, viii. 293, 12 to 15  
 Cruelty, dissuasives from exercising, xi. 315, 4 to 10  
 Crusade, intended, vii. 8, 8 to 17  
 Cupid's parentage, iv. 323, 11 to 15  
 Cur, humorous description of one, i. 176, 15 to p. 177, l. 29  
 Customs, new ones followed, ix. 196, 6 to 8

Dalliance, unseasonable, xiv. 209, 27 to p. 210, l. 15  
 Danger, escape from, iv. 9, 19 to p. 10, l. 2  
 \_\_\_\_\_ takes hold of any support, vi. 180, 4. 5  
 \_\_\_\_\_, personified, xi. 323, 23 to 26  
 Dangerous enterprise, vii. 27, 19 to 24  
 Darkness, its effect on the faculty of hearing, iii. 168, 25 to p. 169, l. 2  
 Daughter, a father's commendation of a, i. 67, 12 to 15  
 Daybreak, iii. 177, 6 to 9. iv. 223, 18 to 20. viii. 326, 6 to 9. ix. 152, 1. 2  
 Dead friends most highly appreciated, v. 116, 19. 20  
 Death, unprepared, ii. 166, 13 to p. 167, l. 6  
 \_\_\_\_\_, its terrors most in apprehension, ii. 184, 20 to 27  
 \_\_\_\_\_, terrors of, ii. 186, 16 to p. 187, l. 5  
 \_\_\_\_\_, apostrophe to, vi. 175, 24 to p. 176, l. 11  
 \_\_\_\_\_, approach of, vi. 223, 16 to 20  
 \_\_\_\_\_, arguments against the fear of, xi. 323, 9 to 14  
 \_\_\_\_\_, reflections on, xii. 141, 4 to 11  
 \_\_\_\_\_, desired in vain, xii. 286, 21 to 26  
 Death-bed injunctions, impression of, vi. 262 14 to p. 263, l. 6

Deceit, vol. ix. page 58, line 10 to 13  
Deed, a good one compared to a candle, iii. 104, 22. 23  
Defamation, ii. 274, 13 to 17  
Degree, reflections on, x. 29, 17 to p. 31, l. 13  
Delay, against, v. 117, 18 to 21  
Delights, violent ones not lasting, xiii. 227, 26 to p. 228, l. 1  
Delirium of the dying, vi. 224, 5 to 16  
Departing diseases, strength of, vi. 179, 8 to 11  
Dependents not to be too much trusted by great men, ix, 211,  
19 to 25  
Depravity, youthful, xi. 12, 15 to 19  
Deprivation of things discloses their value, xii. 16, 11. 12  
Deputy, definition of a, iii. 104, 26 to p. 105, l. 2  
Desdemona, description of, xiv. 218, 19 to 23  
\_\_\_\_\_, her fidelity, xiv. 299, 25 to p. 300, l. 13  
Desire of beloved objects heightened by their loss, iv. 196  
27 to p. 197, l. 11  
Desolation, ix. 243, 5 to 9  
Despair, comfort from, ii. 221, 19 to 21  
\_\_\_\_\_, exhortation to, vi. 204, 17 to 25  
Desperate man, x. 326, 3 to 7  
Despondency, vi. 179, 3 to 7  
Determination, female, vi. 29, 15 to 20  
Determined love, iv. 30, 18 to 27  
Detraction, nature of, iv. 55, 18 to 20  
Dew in flowers, ii. 183, 21 to 24  
Diomedes, his manner of walking, x. 110, 10 to 18  
Dirge, a funeral, xii. 269, 6 to 29  
Discretion, humorous definition of, ii. 46, 18 to 20  
Disguise, iv. 35, 16 to 21  
Displeasure, rash, v. 118, 16 to 22  
Dissimulation in woman, iv. 189, 15 to 22  
Distress prevents ceremony, iv. 279, 17 to 20  
Doubt, description of, x. 47, 12 to 15  
Dover cliff, description of, xiii. 121, 21 to p. 122, l. 12  
Dreams, humorous reflections on, xiii. 191, 5 to p. 193, l. 5  
Drums, vi. 216, 3 to 12  
Drunkards enchanted by Ariel, i. 75, 3 to 16  
Duelling, arguments against, x. 217, 11 to 20  
Duellist, humorous description of one, xiii. 229, 13 to p. 230, l. 14  
Duty, modest, always acceptable, iii. 196, 16 to 26

Duty, performance of, merits no praise, vol. xi. page 153, line 1 to 7

Dying in the sight of a beloved mistress preferable to separation, viii. 217, 19 to p. 218, l. 7

Ecstasy, xi. 103, 5 to 9

Edgar, his account of discovering himself to his father, xiii. 152, 9 to 27

Elegant compliment to a lady, iii. 310, 16 to 21

Eloquence and beauty irresistible, ii. 144, 6 to 10

Eloquent lover, xv. 250, 8 to 14

Emotions, conflicting, v. 380, 12 to 19

England, description of, vi. 132, 6 to 13

——— invincible if unanimous, vi. 228, 10 to 16

——— pathetically described, vi. 264, 5 to p. 265, l. 4

———, apostrophe to, vi. 292, 14 to p. 293, l. 10. vii. 306, 11 to 17

English curiosity, satire on, i. 43, 26 to p. 44, l. 4

——— army described, vi. 183, 20 to p. 184, l. 10

———, humorous description of, vii. 358, 18 to p. 359, l. 3

———, miserable state of, vii. 376, 2 to 15

Enjoyment, frequency of, moderates pleasure, xv. 209, 4 to 15

Envy, ix. 255, 15 to 22. xi. 327, 26 to p. 328, l. 1

Equanimity, xii. 259, 2 to 10

Evening, a fine one, ix. 148, 23 to p. 149, l. 1

Evils, the remedy of them generally in ourselves, v. 15, 27 to p. 16, l. 10

———, good to be extracted from, vii. 361, 23 to p. 362, l. 6

Expedition, what, ix. 119, 13 to 17

Exterior, plausible, iv. 11, 4 to 8

Eyes, women's, iii. 285, 16 to 20

———, harmless, iv. 309, 5 to p. 310, l. 3

Fairies and magic, i. 81, 3 to 20

———, their rewards and punishments, ii. 117, 5 to p. 118, l. 2

Fairy occupations, ii. 118, 3 to 22. iii. 135, 16 to p. 136, l. 6

——— jealousy and its effects, iii. 138, 26 to p. 140, l. 9

——— bank described, iii. 145, 17 to 22

Fairy courtesies, vol. iii. page 159, line 26 to page 160, line 9  
Fallen greatness, xii. 159, 2 to 5  
Falstaff, his humorous description of his regiment, vii. 101,  
14 to p. 102, l. 26  
Falstaff's catechism, vii. 116, 7 to 20  
Fame, ill deeds often done for the sake of, iii. 257, 4 to 16  
Fancy, sonnet on, iii. 62, 15 to 24  
Fashion, influence of, v. 33, 2 to 6  
Father, authority of one, iii. 123, 10 to 14  
———, lamenting his daughter's infamy, iv. 193, 14 to p. 194,  
l. 3  
———, fondness of one for his child, v. 269, 4 to 12  
———, the best guest at his son's nuptials, v. 347, 23 to  
p. 348, l. 13  
———, passion of one on the murder of a favorite child, viii.  
304, 2 to p. 305, l. 6  
———, anger of one, xiii. 14, 2 to 14  
———, the curse of one on his child, xiii. 43, 11 to 25  
Faults of others no justification of our own, ii. 152, 2 to 16  
Favorites compared to honeysuckles, iv. 165, 2 to 6  
Female friendship, iii. 169, 20 to p. 170, l. 16  
Ferdinand, his swimming ashore described, i. 32, 14 to 22  
——— and Miranda, interesting scene between, i. 50, 7  
to p. 54, l. 14  
Fickleness, ii. 201, 22 to 28  
Filcher, unskilful, ii. 22, 5. 6  
Filial ingratitude, xiii. 42, 17 to 19  
Flattery prevalent with women, i. 150, 3 to 6  
———, and an even-minded man, reflections on, xiv. 87, 21  
to p. 88, l. 15  
Fleet setting sail, description of, vii. 329, 12 to p. 330, l. 4  
Fool, description of one, and his reflections on time, iv. 276,  
11 to p. 277, l. 21  
———, his liberty of speech, iv. 277, 22 to p. 278, l. 18  
Fool-hardiness, xii. 262, 1 to 4  
Foreboding, gloomy, xiii. 193, 8 to 13  
Forgiveness, mutual, the duty of, ii. 166, 1 to 8  
Fornication, the crime of, equal to murder, ii. 175, 8 to 15  
Fortitude, true, vi. 29, 6. 7  
——— most conspicuous in adversity, x. 27, 22 to p. 28,  
l. 17

**Fortune**, vol. iii. page 98, line 4 to 8  
 ——, imperfection of good, vii. 243, 19 to 24  
 —— biasses our judgments, x. 230, 13 to 23. xii. 97, 24 to p. 98, l. 2  
**Fortune-teller**, description of a beggarly one, ii. 329, 3 to 11  
**Friend**, a forsaken one, x. 228, 13 to 20  
**Friends**, parting of, ii. 49, 22 to p. 50, l. 9  
**Friendship**, generous, iii. 12, 10 to p. 14, l. 20. *ib.* 74, 16 to p. 75, l. 10  
 —— in love not to be expected, iv. 144, 18 to 23  
 ——, female, iv. 258, 18 to p. 259, l. 8  
 ——, common, xi. 228, 21 to p. 229, l. 5  
 ——, martial, xi. 234, 11 to p. 235, l. 5  
**Frost**, iii. 221, 4. 5  
**Fury** expels fear, xii. 105, 20 to p. 106, l. 1  
  
**Garden scene in Romeo and Juliet**, xiii. 203, 10 to p. 211, l. 4  
**Garland** for old men, v. 333, 17 to 21  
 —— for middle age, v. 335, 3 to 8  
 —— for youth, v. 335, 13 to p. 336, l. 4  
**Gentleman**, an accomplished young one, i. 132, 7 to 12  
 —— usher, description of, iii. 308, 1 to 20  
**Ghost**, description of one appearing in a dream, v. 316, 7 to p. 317, l. 2  
 —— vanishing at the crowing of a cock, xiv. 16, 8 to 17  
**Glory** described, viii. 20, 16 to 18  
**Gloster**, duchess of, her remonstrance to her husband when doing penance, viii. 181, 13 to p. 183, l. 2  
 ——, earl of, his farewell to the world, xiii. 122, 26 to p. 123, l. 6  
**God**, his blessings bestowed on believers, viii. 165, 14. 15  
 ——, goodness of, ever to be remembered, viii. 166, 13. 14  
**Gods**, justice of the, xiii. 151, 26. 27  
**Gold**, reflections on, vii. 248, 8 to 22. x. 231, 10 to p. 232 l. 8. *ib.* 247, 7 to 19  
**Good women**, scarcity of, v. 23, 9 to 13  
 —— things, instability of, vii. 162, 13 to 22  
**Gormandisers** empty-headed, iii. 218, 9. 10  
**Governor**, a severe one, ii. 143, 7 to 21. *ib.* 146, 23 to 27  
 ——, an upright one defined, ii. 211, 16 to p. 212, l. 1

**Grandams**, affection of, vol. ix. page 133, line 3 to 6  
**Gratitude** in an old servant, and tenderness in a master, iv. 264, 22 to p. 267, l. 24  
**Grave**, tranquillity of the, x. 284, 8 to 13  
**Gravitation**, power of, in a heavy body, ii. 81, 14 to 17  
**Gravity**, affected, iii. 10, 25 to p. 11, l. 8. *ib.* 36, 6 to 14  
**Greatness** subject to censure, ii. 207, 1 to 6  
—, falling described, ix. 254, 24 to 29  
—, contemptible when on the decline, x. 84, 6 to 18  
—, departing, xii. 125, 5. 6  
**Grief**, tokens of, vi. 157, 2 to 9  
—, dignity of, vi. 158, 25. 26  
—, nature of, vi. 275, 21 to p. 276, l. 3  
—, real, xiv. 20, 15 to 25  
—, immoderate, to be suppressed, xiv. 21, 1 to 90  
—, useless, xiv. 207, 18 to 25  
**Griefs**, the greater destroy the less, vii. 151, 9 to p. 152  
l. 7  
**Guilty pursuits**, the folly of, xv. 75, 10 to 16  
  
**Hamlet**, his soliloquy on his mother's marriage, xiv. 22, 18 to p. 23, l. 23  
—, his speech at the appearance of his father's ghost, xiv. 36, 5 to 23  
—, and the ghost, scene between, xiv. 38, 20 to p. 43, l. 6  
—, his mad demeanor, described by Ophelia, xiv. 50, 17 to p. 51, l. 21  
—, his reflections on the player and himself, xiv. 74, 30 to p. 77, l. 6  
—, his reflections on death, xiv. 80, 2 to p. 81, l. 9  
—, his instructions to the players, xiv. 85, 12 to p. 87, l. 8  
—, conference between him and his mother, xiv. 107, 8 to p. 116, l. 16  
—, his irresolution, xiv. 125, 8 to p. 126, l. 18  
—, his reflections in the churchyard, xiv. 150, 8 to p. 156, l. 8  
**Hanger-on**, description of one, iv. 124, 20 to 24  
**Hanging**, advantages of, xii. 294, 18 to p. 295, l. 3

Happiness consists in opinion, vol. xiv. page 63, line 2 to 28

Hatred, remorseless, viii. 214, 16 to p. 215, l. 21

Health, a, xiv. 172, 6 to 10

Heart, a good, vii. 414, 6 to 13

Hector, description of him in battle, x. 117, 22 to p. 118, l. 10

Henry IV., his character of Percy and his son, vii. 10, 12 to 24

———, his pathetic address to his son, vii. 81, 7 to p. 83, l. 5

Henry V., soliloquy of, on the profligacy of his companions, vii. 19, 11 to p. 20, l. 5

———, modest defence of himself, vii. 84, 18 to p. 85, l. 20

———, modest challenge of, vii. 114, 16 to p. 115, l. 5

———, his pathetic speech on the death of Hotspur, vii. 128, 9 to 23

———, character of, by his father, vii. 240, 14 to p. 241, l. 1

——— and his dying father, scene between, vii. 249, 12 to p. 254, l. 20

———, perfections of, vii. 290, 28 to p. 291, l. 9

———, character of, by the constable of France, vii. 324, 19 to p. 325, l. 3

———, his address to his army before Harfleur, vii. 331, 5 to p. 332, l. 15

———, his confident valor before the battle of Agincourt, vii. 378, 5 to p. 380, l. 4

Henry VI. on his own lenity, viii. 388, 16 to p. 389, l. 3

Henry VIII. his character of Queen Katharine, ix. 232, 9 to 16

Hero, pretended, vii. 349, 1 to 14

Honesty discarded, xiv. 187, 11 to p. 188, l. 12

Honor, humorous assumption of, ii. 42, 14 to 22

——— should be conferred on merit only, iii. 52, 6 to 18. v. 47, 21 to p. 48, l. 21

———, a maiden's, v. 72, 17. 18

———, eager pursuit of, vii. 28, 5 to 12

——— must be active to preserve its lustre, x. 86, 25 to p. 88, l. 5

——— to be preferred to life, x. 138, 5 to 7

——— and policy, xi. 207, 26 to p. 208, l. 2

Honor, worldly, uncertainty of, vol. xv. page 163, line 5 to 8  
Hope, i. 155, 24. 25. ii. 181, 8. 9. ix. 147, 17. 18  
—, deceitful, vi. 278, 10 to 14  
Hopelessness, vi. 42, 21 to 26  
Horror, its outward effects described, ix. 250, 5 to 12  
Hounds, iii. 186, 6 to 13. v. 147, 15. 16  
Hunting, iii. 185, 23 to p. 186, l. 5  
Hypocrisy in a governor, ii. 185, 9 to 14  
—, nature of, iii. 23, 13 to 18. vi. 203, 23 to 26. xiv. 79, 14 to 23  
Hypocrite, character of a, ii. 230, 19 to p. 231, l. 5  
  
Idolatrous love, v. 27, 27 to p. 28, l. 3  
Jealous husband, humorous soliloquy of a, ii. 52, 18 to p. 56, l. 17  
Jealousy, ii. 279, 4 to p. 280, l. 14. v. 274, 13 to 25  
—, a woman's more deadly than poison, ii. 321, 11 to p. 322, l. 24  
—, definition of, xiv. 263, 28 to p. 264, l. 2  
—, tortures of, portrayed, xiv. 264, 2 to p. 270, l. 14  
Jester, discouraged, iii. 331, 7 to p. 332, l. 10  
—, qualifications of a, iv. 60, 25 to p. 61, l. 4  
If, virtues of an, iv. 344, 23 to p. 345, l. 3  
Illiterate man, pedantic description of an, iii. 264, 7 to 11  
Imaginary evils cause real cares, xi. 17, 6 to 10  
Imagination, power of, iii. 192, 24 to p. 193, l. 15. xiii. 228, 21 to 23  
Imogen in her bed-chamber, xii. 203, 4 to p. 205, l. 13  
— in boy's clothes, xii. 249, 24 to p. 250, l. 19  
— awaking, xii. 270, 12 to p. 271, l. 7  
Impediments stimulate, v. 125, 14. 15  
Impossibilities, xi. 260, 26 to p. 261, l. 3  
Inconstancy in man, i. 193, 1 to 4  
Incorrigible offender, ii. 200, 19 to 21  
Infant, exposure of one, v. 302, 23 to p. 303, l. 2. ib. 317, 7 to 18  
Infidelity in a friend, i. 191, 8 to 12  
Infirmity, the faults of, pardonable, xiii. 68, 9 to 12  
Inflexibility, iii. 84, 7 to 16. v. 280, 13 to 20  
Ingratitude, a song, iv. 283, 4 to 21  
— of false friends described, x. 200, 1 to 16

Ingratitude of false friends exemplified, vol. x. page 205, line 18 to page 207, line 6

Inhumanity described, iii. 81, 13 to 16

Innocence, discovered by the countenance, iv. 194, 19 to 25  
 ———, youthful, v. 264, 9 to 22  
 ———, silent, its eloquence, v. 293, 10. 11  
 ———, intrepidity of, v. 306, 9 to p. 307, l. 13  
 ———, incapable of deceit, xv. 97, 11. 12

Insects, cruelty to, x. 336, 7 to 20

Intents of sin more excusable than acts, ii. 248, 6 to 9

Intercession, impossibility of, ii. 247, 11 to 14

Joy on success, iii. 64, 4 to 10  
 — changed to sorrow, xiii. 278, 21 to 27

Judgment, false, iii. 51, 14 to p. 52, l. 2

Juliet, resolution of, xiii. 266, 12 to 23  
 —, her soliloquy on drinking the opiate, xiii. 271, 4 to p. 272, l. 21

Justice must be impartial, iii. 90, 1 to 9

Justice, lord chief, his conversation with Henry V. whom he had imprisoned, vii. 262, 1 to p. 265, l. 3

Ivy, a usurper compared to, i. 8, 21 to 23

Katharine, Queen, her address to her husband, ix. 227, 9 to p. 228, l. 26  
 ———, her reproof of Cardinal Wolsey, ix. 231, 2 to 13  
 ———, on her own merit, ix. 242, 1 to 13  
 ———, her last sickness, ix. 271 19 to p. 279, l. 22

Keenness of women's tongues, iii. 305, 8 to 13

Kent, county of, described, viii. 243, 22 to 26

King, in Hamlet, his despairing soliloquy, with Hamlet's reflections thereon, xiv. 104, 7 to p. 106, l. 16

Kings, evil purposes of, too servilely executed, vi. 196, 19 to 25  
 ———, misery of, vi. 297, 18 to p. 298, l. 27  
 ———, a knowledge of their secrets undesirable, xi. 21, 22 to p. 22, l. 2  
 ———, death of, xiv. 103, 4 to 16  
 ———, divinity of, xiv. 132, 17 to 20

Kisses, chaste, iv. 306, 24 to p. 307, l. 2

Knave. recommendation of one, vol. vii. page 257, line 7 to 22  
\_\_\_\_\_, crafty, xiv. 226, 12 to 23  
Knights of the Garter, character of, viii. 78, 25 to p. 79, l. 4

Labor in vain, vii. 369, 17 to 19. viii. 299, 1 to 3  
\_\_\_\_\_, sweetens seasons of repose, xii. 251, 7 to 9

Lady, address to a religious, ii. 148, 15 to 18  
\_\_\_\_\_, a complete one, vi. 149, 5 to 10

Lamentations, ix. 125, 9 to 14  
\_\_\_\_\_, over Imogen supposed to be dead, xii. 265, 25 to p. 268, l. 22

Lavinia at her lute, x. 321, 13 to 26  
\_\_\_\_\_, the loss of her tongue described, x. 325, 21 to 25

Laws, neglected, ii. 143, 15 to 21

Lear, on the ingratitude of his daughters, xiii. 76, 3 to 17  
\_\_\_\_\_, his distress in the storm described, xiii. 78, 8 to 20  
\_\_\_\_\_, and his companions in the storm, xiii. 80, 20 to p. 84, l. 1  
\_\_\_\_\_, his distraction described, xiii. 117, 21 to p. 118, l. 3  
\_\_\_\_\_, his reflections on his former flatterers, xiii. 125, 23 to p. 126, l. 9  
\_\_\_\_\_, and Cordelia, scene between, xiii. 136, 12 to p. 138, l. 6  
\_\_\_\_\_, his address to Cordelia when taken prisoner, xiii. 144, 6 to 20  
\_\_\_\_\_, his affliction for the loss of Cordelia, and death, xiii. 155, 19 to p. 158, l. 16

Liar, deserved treatment of a, v. 58, 23 to 25

Liberty indulged, consequence of, ii. 141, 25 to p. 142, l. 4  
\_\_\_\_\_, spirit of, xi. 304, 18 to p. 305, l. 2

Licentiousness the consequence of unexecuted laws, ii. 145, 17 to p. 146, l. 2

Life, reflections on the vanity of, ii. 181, 12 to p. 183, l. 4  
\_\_\_\_\_, recluse described, iii. 124, 6 to 17  
\_\_\_\_\_, checkered, v. 94, 22 to 26  
\_\_\_\_\_, natural desire of, v. 260, 21 to p. 261, l. 4  
\_\_\_\_\_, reflections on, vi. 104, 9 to 18  
\_\_\_\_\_, demands active virtue, vii. 120, 4 to 7  
\_\_\_\_\_, the vicissitudes of, pathetically delineated, ix. 260, 15 to p. 261, l. 9

Life, loathed, vol. xii. page 120, line 12 to 15  
—, necessaries of few, xiii. 75, 23 to 26  
—, and death, soliloquy on, xiv. 80, 2 to p. 81, l. 9  
Lightness of foot, i. 76, 7. 8  
Lion, illustration of a furious one, viii. 296, 9 to 12  
Loquacity, iii. 12, 2 to 6  
Love commended and censured, i. 105, 5 to 13  
—, froward and dissembling, i. 111, 20 to 24  
—, compared to an April day, i. 119, 1 to 4  
—, contempt of, punished, i. 134, 21 to p. 135, l. 9  
—, compared to a waxen image, i. 137, 15 to 17  
—, increased by endeavors to suppress it, i. 143, 3 to 21  
—, compared to a figure on ice, i. 161, 9 to 11  
—, unreturned, i. 190, 4 to 7  
—, in a grave deputy, ii. 173, 8 to p. 174, l. 16  
— messenger compared to a day in April, iii. 54, 12 to 16  
—, true ever crossed, iii. 126, 18 to p. 127, l. 8  
—, mutability of, iii. 130, 15 to 24  
— in idleness, iii. 141, 18 to p. 142, l. 11  
—, omnipotence of, iii. 235, 18 to p. 236, l. 10  
—, humorous description of, iii. 254, 17 to p. 255, l. 22  
—, the power of, iii. 284, 20 to p. 285, l. 20  
—, effects of, iii. 327, 22 to p. 328, l. 18  
—, trial of, iii. 329, 18 to p. 330, l. 4  
—, indications of true, iv. 45, 6 to 11. v. 338, 4 to 9  
—, concealed, iv. 49, 9 to 14  
—, unsought, iv. 64, 13 to 24  
—, madness of, iv. 300, 16 to 20  
—, progress of, iv. 335, 3 to 12  
—, description of true, iv. 337, 3 to 18  
— at first sight, v. 158, 1 to 17  
— cemented by prosperity, but loosened by adversity, v. 355, 16 to 18  
— exhibited in a brave young soldier, x. 9, 6 to 17. ib. 11, 10 to 25  
—, constancy in protested, x. 79, 11 to p. 80, l. 9  
— to be shaken off by a soldier, x. 89, 26 to p. 90, l. 8  
—, invitation to, x. 307, 7 to 24  
— the nobleness of life, xii. 9, 2 to 10  
—, inconsistencies of, xiii. 177, 15 to 19

Love, heralds of, vol. xiii. page 224, line 7 to 11  
—, sole motive for the marriage of Othello, xiv. 194, 18 to p. 195, l. 1  
—, eternity of, xv. 213, 1 to 6. *ib.* 217, 25 to p. 218, l. 10  
Lover, assertions of one, i. 27, 6 to 13. *ib.* 68, 5 to 13  
—, a faithful and constant one, i. 145, 7 to 10  
—, grief of one at his banishment, i. 152, 24 to p. 153, l. 16  
—, in solitude, i. 188, 13 to 24  
—, a successful one compared to a conqueror, iii. 65, 13 to 20  
—, his thoughts compared to the inarticulate joys of a crowd, iii. 66, 20 to 26  
—, description of, iv. 269, 12 to 21. *ib.* 299, 16 to 27  
—, commendation of one, v. 336, 12 to 23  
—, exclamation of one, v. 346, 16 to 22  
—, an expecting one described, x. 72, 24 to p. 74, l. 7  
—, impatience of one, xiii. 237, 24 to p. 238, l. 5  
Lovers parting, viii. 216, 7 to 20. x. 97, 14 to 21. xii. 178, 21 to p. 179, l. 20. xiii. 252, 19 to p. 254, l. 2  
—, variable humors of, xii. 48, 21 to p. 49, l. 25  
—, light of foot, xiii. 228, 7 to 11  
—, vows of, not to be trusted, xiv. 33, 11 to 16  
—, their computation of time, xiv. 278, 7 to 10  
Loyalty, reflections on, xii. 98, 11 to 17

Macbeth, his virtues and vices, vi 22, 6 to 15  
—, his irresolution, vi. 27, 6 to p. 28, l. 9  
—, his perpetration of the murder of Duncan, and subsequent scene with his wife, vi. 33, 3 to p. 38, l. 6  
—, his fears of Banquo, vi. 50, 10 to p. 51, l. 8  
—, his guilty conscience and purposes of cruelty, vi. 55, 4 to p. 57, l. 8  
—, his confusion and terror at the banquet, vi. 60, 20 to p. 65, l. 12  
—, lady, her soliloquy on the news of Duncan's approach, vi. 23, 8 to 25  
—, her cruel intrepidity depicted, vi. 29, 15 to 30  
—, her terrors in sleep, vi. 94, 6 to p. 97, l. 9

**Macduff**, his affliction on the murder of his wife and children.  
 vol. vi. page 89, line 24 to page 93, line 25  
**Madness**, methodical, ii. 231, 6 to 10  
 ———, occasioned by poison, vi. 224, 22 to p. 225, l. 19  
 ———, symptoms of, xiv. 127, 2 to 11  
**Magnanimity**, female, ii. 177, 3 to p. 178, l. 3  
 ———, example of, xi. 175, 3 to 8  
**Maidens**, their prayers effectual, ii. 150, 16 to 20  
**Malcolm**, his suspicions of Macduff, and false character of  
 himself, vi. 82, 22 to p. 88, l. 20  
**Malediction**, ix. 123, 8 to 15  
 ———, humorous, x. 56, 19 to 25  
**Malicious men**, ix. 292, 20 to 22  
**Man in love**, humorous description of, i. 120, 7 to 21  
 ———, three things in him disliked by females, i. 162, 9 to 11  
 ———, description of a merry, iii. 239, 5 to 15  
 ——— in tears, vi. 211, 9 to 28  
 ———, reflections on, xiv. 64, 31 to p. 65, l. 16  
**Manhood deteriorated**, iv. 200, 17 to 21  
**Man's pre-eminence**, ii. 270, 20 to p. 271, l. 2  
**Margaret**, Queen, her speech before the battle of Tewkes-  
 bury, viii. 402, 18 to p. 403, l. 6  
 ———, to Queen Elizabeth, on the fulfilment of  
 her prophecies, ix. 123, 19 to p. 124, l. 25  
**Marriage state**, song on the, iv. 347, 2 to 7  
 ——— described, viii. 124, 21 to p. 125, l. 6  
**Martlet**, description of, vi. 25, 9 to 16  
**Masked ladies**, iii. 307, 1 to 3  
**Master taking an affectionate leave of his servants**, xii. 107.  
 20 to p. 108, l. 25  
**Mediocrity**, advantages of, iii. 15, 1 to 5  
**Meekness**, xii. 244, 13 to 16  
**Melancholy**, varieties of, iv. 315, 6 to 16  
 ——— man, humorous description of, v. 63, 12 to 23  
 ———, the parent of error, xi. 383, 17 to 21  
 ——— succeeding the heat of passion, xiv. 159, 12  
 to 17  
**Memory**, ostentatious display of, iii. 266, 8 to 15  
**Men**, frail, ii. 151, 17 to p. 152, l. 1  
 ———, various ranks of, vi. 52, 11 to 20  
 ———, studiously uncivil, xiii. 59, 10 to 19

Men, wilful, vol. xiii. page 77, line 12 to 14  
Mercy, frequently mistaken, ii. 162, 5. 6  
—, commended in governors, ii. 165, 11 to 15  
—, quality of, iii. 88, 24 to p. 89, l. 17. x. 282, 21 to 23  
Merit no match for the caprice of fortune, iii. 27, 24 to p. 28, l. 11  
— always modest, iv. 156, 5. 6  
Messenger in haste described, vii. 147, 8 to 20  
— with ill news, vii. 148, 10 to p. 150, l. 2  
Midnight, iii. 207, 20. xiv. 101, 26 to p. 102, l. 3  
Mind, lowliness of, ii. 176, 19 to 22  
— alone valuable, v. 227, 20 to p. 228, l. 3  
—, its diseases incurable, vi. 101, 7 to 14  
—, a disordered one, xiv. 83, 17 to p. 84, l. 1  
Mirth displeasing to melancholy minds, xv. 112, 15 to 19  
Misanthropy, x. 232, 20 to 22. *ib.* 263, 3 to 22  
Miser compared to a whale, xi. 31, 9 to 15  
Misery, appeal of, xi. 25, 15 to 17  
Misfortune sometimes brings contentment, x. 262, 18 to 20  
—, moral advantages of, xiii. 131, 5 to 8  
Mistress, a passionate lover's address to, ii. 292, 18 to 22  
Mob, improvidence of, iii. 51, 20 to 25  
—, instability of, viii. 340, 22 to p. 341, l. 4, xi. 128, 8 to p. 129, l. 3  
Modesty in youth, iv. 250, 15 to 25  
Moon, iii. 129, 18 to 20  
Moonlight night, iii. 103, 9 to 20. *ib.* 106, 8 to 10  
Morning, description of, viii. 307, 4 to 7. xiv. 16, 27. 28  
Mother, fondness of one for a beautiful child, vi. 157, 26 to p. 158, l. 10  
—, ravings of one, vi. 176, 21 to p. 177, l. 8  
—, grief of one for the loss of her son, vi. 177, 25 to p. 178, l. 27  
Murder, dissuasives from, ix. 47, 13 to 18  
— of the young princes, description of, ix. 117, 7 to p. 118, l. 4  
Murderer, countenance of one, vi. 190, 24 to p. 191, l. 3  
Muse, invocation to the, vii. 287, 3 to 10  
Music, supernatural, i. 22, 17 to 23

**Music**, reflections on, vol. iii. page 61, line 23 to page 69, line 6  
 ——, power of, iii. 103, 25 to p. 104, l. 19  
 ——, the food of love, iv. 7, 8 to 14  
**Mutability**, vii. 203, 9 to 20. xiv. 94, 13 to 16

**Naiads**, call to the, i. 72, 28 to p. 73, l. 2  
**Natural beauty**, iv. 29, 14 to 18  
 —— productions, xiii. 211, 13 to p. 212, l. 20  
**Nature and art**, v. 333, 25 to p. 334, l. 20  
 ——, the force of, xii. 232, 23 to p. 233, l. 16  
**Newsbearers**, vi. 195, 18 to p. 196, l. 13  
**Night**, description of, iii. 208, 3 to 22. viii. 220, 20 to p. 221, l. 5  
 —— in a camp described, vii. 359, 17 to p. 361, l. 7  
 —— encounter of soldiers with Henry V. in disguise, vii. 365, 10 to p. 370, l. 23  
**Novelty**, dangers of, vi. 189, 1 to 7  
**Nun**, sanctity of, ii. 148, 15 to 18

**Oaths**, what trust to be placed on, vii. 322, 18 to 24  
 ——, sinful, not to be kept, viii. 264, 5 to 13  
 —— unnecessary to bind brave men, xi. 312, 26 to p. 313, l. 24

**Obedience to princes**, ix. 243, 19 to 21  
**Observation**, men of, vii. 204, 16 to 21  
**Octavia's obscure entrance into Rome censured**, xii. 81, 13 to p. 82, l. 1

**Offences mistaken**, xiii. 72, 18. 19  
**Oliver**, his description of his danger while sleeping, iv. 327, 26 to p. 329, l. 3  
**Omnipotence inscrutable**, v. 36, 21 to 24  
**Ophelia**, description of her death, xiv. 146, 6 to 23  
 ——, directions for her interment, xiv. 157, 10 to 12  
**Opinion**, fallible, xv. 221, 7 to 12  
**Opportunity**, neglect of, iv. 66, 6 to 11. x. 90, 7 to 12  
 —— to be seised on all occasions, xi. 370, 16 to 22  
**Oppressed servant**, humorous description of, ii. 312, 18 to p. 313, l. 3  
**Ornament**, or false appearance, iii. 62, 26 to p. 63, l. 25

Othello, his apology to the senate, vol. xiv. page 202, line 14 to page 206, line 7  
 ———, his jealousy excited, xiv. 253, 22 to p. 270, l. 14  
 ———, his story of the handkerchief, xiv. 273, 10 to p. 274, l. 5  
 ———, his fondness, xiv. 288, 4 to 22  
 ———, his confirmed jealousy, xiv. 291, 10 to 26  
 ———, his pathetic upbraidings of Desdemona, xiv. 294, 3 to p. 297, l. 4  
 ———, his murder of Desdemona, and subsequent remorse and death, xiv. 315, 23 to p. 332, l. 6  
 Outward appearance a token of inward worth, iv. 11, 5 to 9

Painting, graphic description of, v. 147, 19 to p. 148, l. 8  
 ——— without hypocrisy, x. 171, 5 to 8

Parasites of a rich man, x. 178, 24 to p. 179, l. 4  
 ——— punished, x. 224, 17 to p. 225, l. 10

Pardon the sanction of wickedness, ii. 146, 10 to 12  
 ———, despair of, v. 313, 25 to p. 314, l. 4

Parental affection, v. 268, 18 to 25. viii. 316, 7 to 13

Passion too strong for vows, i. 69, 10 to 13  
 ———, real dissembled, iv. 313, 9 to p. 314, l. 10  
 ———, a rising one described, xiii. 73, 23 to p. 74, l. 7

Passions, guilty, xv. 95, 4. 5

Pastors, ungracious, satire on, xiv. 30, 11 to 17

Patching, humorous illustration of, iv. 21, 23 to 26

Patience easier taught than practised, ii. 271, 9 to 14  
 ——— and sorrow, xiii. 115, 23 to p. 116, l. 4

Patriotism, xi. 292, 3 to 9

Peace favorable to love, iv. 132, 11 to 20  
 ———, recommendation of, vi. 212, 16 to 20  
 ——— after a civil war, vii. 7, 8 to p. 8, l. 8  
 ——— after a siege, xi. 269, 9 to 15

Pedler, humorous description of one, v. 339, 15 to 22

People, Brutus's address to the, after the murder of Cæsar, xi. 343, 25 to p. 345, l. 8

Perception, imperfection of human, xii. 192, 18 to 24

Percy, lady, her speech to her husband, vii. 43, 3 to p. 44, l. 6

Perfection admits of no addition, vi. 188, 15 to 20  
 ———, extent of human, xiv. 25, 7. 8

Person, description of a murdered one, *vol. viii.* page 208,  
     line 9 to page 209, line 4  
 Personal charms neglected and lost, *i.* 182, 7 to 14  
 Petition, a tender one, and reply, *iv.* 280, 6 to p. 281, l. 5  
 Petruchio, his humorous opposition to the inclinations of his  
     wife, *v.* 221, 23 to p. 224, l. 24  
 Philosophy, a shepherd's, *iv.* 286, 11 to 19  
 Pity to be discarded in war, *x.* 139, 4 to 7  
 Play-fellows, *iv.* 257, 26 to p. 258, l. 3  
 Pleasure, vanity of, *iii.* 219, 26, 27  
     ——— and revenge, *x.* 53, 22 to 24  
     ——— of doing good, *x.* 181, 7 to 25  
 Poetry, its influence on females, *i.* 164, 2 to 10  
 Popular favor, method to gain, *xi.* 209, 6 to 20  
 Popularity, dislike of, *ii.* 136, 7 to 12  
     ——— described, *vi.* 260, 10 to 23. *xi.* 166, 14 to p. 167,  
     l. 5. *ib.* 181, 8 to 16. *ib.* 298, 22 to p. 299, l. 8  
 Portia, her suitors, *iii.* 46, 23 to p. 47, l. 2  
     ———, her picture described, *iii.* 64, 11 to 24  
     ———, commendation of, *iii.* 80, 12 to 22  
     ———, wife to Brutus, her pathetic address to her husband,  
         *xi.* 317, 19 to p. 318, l. 14  
 Possession more languid than expectation, *iii.* 42, 11 to 25  
 Poverty most accessible to pity, *xiii.* 131, 6 to 8  
 Power, abuse of, *ii.* 180, 15 to 20. *xiii.* 128, 2 to 22  
     ———, vanity of, *vi.* 297, 18 to p. 298, l. 27  
 Praise and censure humorously contrasted, *iv.* 98, 4 to 18  
 Precepts against the vicissitudes of fortune, *xi.* 220, 8 to  
     16  
 Precipitation, *iii.* 162, 24 to p. 163, l. 1  
 Preferment, *xiv.* 187, 2 to 5  
 Prejudice, nature of, *xiv.* 35, 15 to 28  
 Presents prevail with women, *i.* 149, 16 to 18  
     ——— lightly regarded by real lovers, *v.* 345, 8 to p. 346  
         l. 6  
 Presumption, *v.* 37, 6 to 10  
 Pride, example of, *ix.* 178, 13 to 19  
     ——— cures pride, *x.* 83, 2 to 4  
 Prodigality, example of, *x.* 186, 6 to 15  
 Prodigies ridiculed, *vii.* 68, 16 to p. 70, l. 24  
     ——— detailed by Calphurnia, *xi.* 322, 19 to p. 323, l. 4

Prodigies preceding the death of Cæsar, vol. xiv. page 14,  
line 20 to page 15, line 3

Profligacy short-lived, vi. 263, 23 to p. 264, l. 2

Promises, speedy accomplishment of, viii. 33, 10. 11  
— and performance, difference between, x. 255, 5 to  
12

Prospero's reproof of Ariel, i. 16, 4 to p. 18, l. 7

Providence, invocation to its justice, xiii. 109, 15 to 22  
— directs our actions, xiv. 160, 18 to p. 161, l. 1

Prudence recommended, vii. 165, 19 to p. 166, l. 11

Puck's humorous description of himself, iii. 137, 10 to 21

Quarrel, ridiculous propensity to, xiii. 229, 9 to p. 230, l. 17

Quickly, dame, her account of Falstaff's death, vii. 321, 8 to  
22

Raillery, nature of, iv. 23, 11 to 16

Reason, balance of, xiv. 212, 24 to 28

Rebellion in a religious teacher, vii. 220, 7 to 27  
—, justification of, vii. 221, 2 to p. 222, l. 6

Reflections on a wounded stag, iv. 261, 20 to p. 263, l. 17

Regicides detestable, v. 277, 14 to 19

Relenting tenderness, xi. 260, 5 to 18

Religious novice addressed, ii. 148, 15 to 18

Remembrance, sorrowful, vii. 185, 10 to 14

Remonstrance, honest, v. 292, 25 to p. 293, l. 4

Repentance, efficacy of, i. 191, 15 to 23  
—, true, ii. 172, 1 to 21  
—, resolutions of, vii. 87, 1 to 7

Reproof, ill-timed, i. 33, 14 to 17  
— of an unfaithful husband, ii. 290, 21 to p. 291, l. 24

Reputation, weight of established, ii. 179, 24 to p. 180, l. 1  
—, spotless, vi. 242, 13 to 15

Resentment, silent, the deepest, viii. 187, 19. 20

Resignation and gratitude, i. 28. 6 to 14

Resolution, necessity of, ii. 150, 14 to 16  
—, from a sense of honor, ii. 185, 1 to 5. iv. 195, 24  
to p. 196, l. 9  
—, obstinate, xi. 259, 13 to 28  
—, female, xii. 153, 4 to 10

Respect, modest, x. 35, 3 to 6

Retaliation, vol. iii. page 84, line 24 to page 85, line 15  
Retirement, attachment to, ii. 145, 5 to 8  
\_\_\_\_\_, timely, v. 18, 25 to p. 19, l. 13  
Retribution, righteous, ix. 146, 2 to 6  
Retrospection, sad, xv. 165, 21 to p. 166, l. 12  
Revenge, unextinguishable, iii. 84, 7 to 16. viii. 296, 22 to p. 297, l. 4  
\_\_\_\_\_, personified, address to, x. 370, 1 to 15  
Reverses of fortune, anger caused by, xii. 103, 9 to 15  
Rhymers ridiculed, vii. 73, 16 to 22  
Richard III. his reflections on his chances of success, viii. 348, 6 to p. 350, l. 17  
\_\_\_\_\_, omens on the birth of, viii. 410, 1 to 11  
\_\_\_\_\_, his cruel determination, ix. 7, 8 to p. 8, l. 20  
\_\_\_\_\_, his pretended love for lady Anne, ix. 20, 22 to p. 21, l. 16  
\_\_\_\_\_, his ironical commendations of his own person, ix. 24, 2 to p. 25, l. 12  
\_\_\_\_\_, his hypocrisy, ix. 39, 11 to 15  
\_\_\_\_\_, character of, by his mother, ix. 127, 8 to 14  
\_\_\_\_\_, his terrors in the night preceding the battle of Bosworth, ix. 156, 12 to p. 157, l. 12  
\_\_\_\_\_, his address to his army, ix. 161, 22 to p. 163, l. 15  
\_\_\_\_\_, his martial courage, ix. 164, 4 to 10  
Richmond, earl of, his prayer, ix. 152, 25 to p. 153, l. 6  
\_\_\_\_\_, his address to his army, ix. 158, 21 to p. 160, l. 1  
Ring, description of a valuable one, x. 316, 3 to 7  
Rising early the way to eminence, xii. 112, 21. 22  
Rival, modest and generous eulogium of, iii. 128, 15 to p. 129, l. 2  
Romeo's despair on his banishment, xiii. 243, 22 to p. 250, l. 24  
\_\_\_\_\_, his description of, and interview with the apothecary, xiii. 282, 23 to p. 284, l. 21  
\_\_\_\_\_, his arrival at the tomb of Juliet, and death, xiii. 287, 12 to p. 291, l. 5  
Rosalind proposing to assume male attire, iv. 259, 18 to 26  
Royalty, miseries of, vii. 370, 24 to p. 372, l. 20  
\_\_\_\_\_, inborn, xii. 264, 22 to p. 265, l. 6

Rulers should be impartial. vol. ii. page 205 line 3 to 18  
 Rumor described, vii. 143, 4 to 23

Sack, merits of, vii. 237, 6 to p. 238, l. 19  
 Sarcasm, poignancy of, iv. 146, 27 to p. 147, l. 18  
 Satire, apology for, iv. 278, 19 to p. 279, l. 8  
 Satirist, description of a dull, iv. 143, 5 to 10  
 Say, lord, his apology for himself, viii. 244, 3 to 12  
 Schoolboy simplicity, iv. 146, 10 to 12  
 Scorn retorted, iv. 310, 8 to p. 311, l. 11  
 Season, nothing good out of, iii. 105, 7 to 15  
 Seditious leaders, vii. 114, 3 to 13  
 Seducers, custom of, v. 89, 11 to 14  
 Self-accusation of indiscreet love, v. 68, 8 to p. 69, l. 9  
 Self-conceit, humorous, v. 362, 25 to 27  
 Self-denial, commendation of, iii. 217, 6 to p. 218, l. 15  
 Self-interest palliates faults, i. 178, 6 to 10  
 \_\_\_\_\_, powerful effects of, vi. 154, 16 to p. 155, l. 26  
 Senses returning, i. 82, 15 to p. 83, l. 7  
 Sensibility, obtuseness of, x. 200, 12 to 17  
 Service, faithful, v. 273, 7 to 21  
 Shallow, justice, humorous character of, vii. 217, 6 to p. 218.  
 l. 12. *ib.* 258, 2 to 26  
 Shepherd, character of an honest and simple one, iv. 288, 4  
 to 8  
 Shepherd's life, the blessings of, contrasted with regal state,  
 viii. 326, 26 to p. 328, l. 2  
 Shylock, malice of, iii. 21, 3 to 14  
 \_\_\_\_\_, expostulations of, iii. 23, 22 to p. 24, l. 20  
 \_\_\_\_\_, his injunctions to his daughter, iii. 40, 28 to p. 41,  
 l. 8  
 \_\_\_\_\_, his implacable revenge, with grief for the loss of his  
 daughter, iii. 56, 5 to p. 59, l. 28  
 \_\_\_\_\_, his inflexibility, iii. 83, 1 to 23  
 Siege, terrors of a, vi. 140, 1 to p. 142, l. 5  
 Silence, jocose satire on, iii. 11, 22, 23  
 Simplicity and duty, iii. 196, 8 to 15  
 \_\_\_\_\_, rural, v. 350, 1 to 5  
 Singing, bad, iv. 157, 16 to 20  
 Sins, compelled, ii. 175, 24, 25  
 Slander, not to be removed, ii. 269, 4 to 23

Slander, its ubiquity, vol. xii. page 235, line 16 to 22  
 Sleep a comforter to sorrow, i. 36, 3 to 5  
 —, sound, ii. 210, 22. 23  
 —, apostrophe to, vii. 201, 19 to p. 202, l. 20  
 — of youthful innocence, xi. 317, 9 to 13  
 Snail, tardy lover compared to, iv. 316, 21 to p. 317, l. 3  
 Soldier, humorous account of an unpractised, v. 102, 13 to 19  
 Soldier's death, vi. 110, 11 to 25. *ib.* 219, 17 to 21  
 Solicitation, the season of, xi. 252, 17 to 25  
 Soliloquy in prison, vi. 344, 19 to p. 347, l. 5  
 Song, character of an old, iv. 46, 13 to 18  
 Songs, beautiful, iii. 275, 14 to p. 276, l. 4. iv. 46, 22 to p. 47.  
     l. 12. xv. 278, 8 to 19  
 Sonnet, beautiful, iii. 273, 10 to 23  
 Sorrow, pliability of, iv. 198, 4. 5  
 —, effects of, ix. 43, 2. 3  
 Sorrows rarely single, xiv. 130, 13. 14  
 Sour countenance, iv. 138, 8. 9  
 Speculation easier than practice, iii. 15, 8 to 17  
 Spendthrift, professions of a reformed, ii. 76, 2 to 16  
 Spirit, a warlike one awakened, vii. 305, 24 to p. 306, l. 6  
 Spring and Winter, a song, iii. 333, 15 to p. 334, l. 20  
 Station, the blessings of a low, ix. 221, 17 to 20  
 Statue, a masterly one described, v. 385, 14 to p. 388, l. 12  
 Steward, a faithful one, x. 197, 20 to p. 198, l. 2  
 Stoic philosophers, satire on, iv. 206, 1 to 5  
 Stories, melancholy, vi. 329, 13 to 20  
 Storm, Ariel's description and management of one, i. 13, 14  
     to p. 14, l. 11  
 Study, vanity of, iii. 220, 11 to 20  
 Submission to Heaven our duty, ix. 61, 1 to 7  
 Success not equal to our hopes, x. 26, 17 to 23  
 Suicide, condemnation of, xi. 279, 9 to 14  
 Sun rising after a dark night, vi. 293, 20 to p. 294, l. 1  
 Suretyship, dangers attendant on, viii. 230, 21 to 27  
 Sycophants, flattering, xiii. 58, 8 to 16  
 Sympathy of a lover with his mistress, ii. 32, 8 to 22  
  
 Tears of affection, x. 326, 21 to 23  
 Tempest at land, xi. 301, 7 to 17

Tempest at sea, vol. xiv. page 216, line 4 to 16  
Tenderness in love, iv. 312, 24 to p. 313, l. 4  
Thanks, beggarly, iv. 273, 9 to 13. vi. 284, 13 to 15  
—, value of, x. 287, 3. 4  
Thersites mimicing Ajax, x. 90, 22 to p. 93, l. 11  
Thoughts ineffectual to moderate affliction, vi. 258, 15 to 24  
Threat, xiv. 237, 10 to 15  
Time, its duration variously estimated, iv. 297, 10 to p. 298, l. 4  
— and decay, xv. 156, 17 to p. 157, l. 4. *ib.* 194, 8 to 11  
Timon, his execration of the Athenians, x. 226, 6 to p. 227, l. 24  
—, his reflections on mankind, x. 230, 11 to p. 231, l. 10  
—, his instructions to Alcibiades, x. 235, 12 to p. 236, l. 9  
—, his reflections on the earth, x. 238, 17 to p. 239, l. 14  
—, his discourse with Apemantus, x. 239, 16 to p. 243, l. 1  
—, his advice to the thieves, x. 248, 24 to p. 250, l. 8  
—, his character of an honest steward, x. 252, 5 to 20  
—, his intended monument, and final curse, x. 264, 1 to 10  
Titles, reflections on new ones, vi. 126, 24 to p. 128, l. 6  
Tool in office, xi. 356, 17 to p. 357, l. 26  
Traitor, challenge offered to a, xiii. 150, 3 to 14  
Transformation of heathen deities for love, v. 331, 14 to 24  
Transmigration of animals, illustration of, iii. 86, 15 to 23  
Travel and study, uses of, v. 152, 5 to p. 153, l. 20  
Travelling, advantages of, i. 108, 6 to 13. *ib.* 116, 13 to 17  
—, satirical reflections on, iv. 315, 17 to p. 316, l. 8  
Treason suspected, vii. 117, 1 to 12  
Troilus, character of, x. 114, 8 to 21  
Trumpeter, address to one, x. 110, 1 to 6  
Trust in man, vanity of, ix. 90, 3 to 8  
Truth, appearance of, xi. 99, 17 to 23  
— acceptable to great minds, xii. 14, 21 to p. 15, l. 40  
Truths, unwelcome rarely told, xv. 232, 16. 17  
Tyrants made formidable by the folly of their subjects, xi. 305, 6 to 14

Valley, description of a barren one, vol. x. page 310, line 11 to 22

Valor, intrepid, vi. 8, 23 to p. 9, l. 5. x. 146, 4 to 7

Value, real, x. 49, 4 to 11

Vanity of human nature, i. 74, 1 to 11  
— wishes, xii. 32, 11 to 14

Verbosity, empty, iii. 288, 1. 2

Vicious persons infatuated by Heaven, xii. 102, 2 to 6

Vicissitudes of fortune, xiii. 106, 10 to 18

Victory by the French, description of, vi. 143, 21 to p. 144, l. 8  
— English, description of, vi. 144, 10 to 21

Villain to be noted, iv. 215, 7 to 9  
—, his look and pretended zeal, vi. 197, 4 to p. 198, l. 2

Virtue given to be exerted, ii. 134, 19 to p. 135, l. 4  
—, intrepidity of, ii. 190, 12  
— and ability, xi. 59, 10 to 15  
— rewarded, xi. 111, 16 to 18

Virtuous love's reliance, iii. 144, 11 to 17

Ulysses, his subtlety in ridiculing the stupidity of Ajax, x. 62, 2 to p. 66, l. 17

Uncertainty of opinion in a period of anxiety, iv. 340, 18 to 21

Underlings, subservient, i. 40, 20 to 23

Unkindness in a child, xiii. 69, 19 to 21

Volumnia's resolution contrasted with the pride of her son, xi. 211, 14 to 21  
— pathetic and successful intercession with her son, xi. 262, 13 to p. 266, l. 7

Vows, rash ones condemned, iii. 223, 3 to 8. x. 137, 17 to 19  
— of lovers not to be trusted, xii. 236, 12 to 16

Utopian forms of government, satire on, i. 34, 4 to 26

Wanderer, complaints of one, ii. 266, 19 to 26

War, prognostics of, vi. 289, 11 to 18  
—, miseries of, vii. 409, 6 to p. 410, l. 13  
—, apostrophe to, viii. 267, 14 to 21

Warriors, gallant, vii. 99, 7 to 20

Warwick, earl of, his dying speech, viii. 396, 10 to p. 397  
l. 11

Watch, humorous charge to, iv. 174, 25 to p. 178, l. 4